



तमसो मा ज्योतिर्गमय

VISVA BHARATI
LIBRARY
SANTINIKETAN

B 455

R 35

46158

ITALIAN GRAMMAR FOR ENGLISH
STUDENTS.

ITALIAN GRAMMAR

FOR
ENGLISH STUDENTS

BY
LUIGI RICCI

PROFESSOR AT KING'S COLLEGE, UNIVERSITY OF LONDON



London and Newcastle-on-Tyne
THE WALTER SCOTT PUBLISHING CO., LTD.

NEW YORK: 3 EAST 14TH STREET

1904

PRICE TWO SHILLINGS AND SIXPENCE

PREFACE.



WHEN Mr. Frederick J. Crowest, the genial and able Editor and Manager of the Walter Scott Publishing Company, Ltd., asked me to write another Italian Grammar, I readily complied with his request for the following reason:—In 1877 I wrote an Italian Grammar on my appointment as teacher of Italian at the City of London College. But at that time I had no experience in teaching my language to English students. During the last twenty-seven years, however, I have been teaching Italian every day—and with some success, the average number of my pupils having been always above 200 every year.

It was but natural that I should not be satisfied with a book written before I gained this experience, which enables me to know exactly what it is that the English student of Italian needs, and what is superfluous and useless to him.

This simplified Italian Grammar, therefore, contains only those rules which I have found indispensable to the English student who wishes to learn how to read and speak Italian—nothing more and nothing less.

Those students who, after going through a course with this Grammar, would wish to obtain a more complete knowledge of Italian and learn Italian syntax thoroughly, should obtain Fornaciari's *Sintassi Italiana*, the best book on this subject.

I regret my inability to recommend an English-Italian Dictionary, of which there is not a single one without a large number of mistakes; that of Baretto, though written one hundred and fifty years ago, is still the one containing fewest mistakes—an additional proof of the worthlessness of all the others.

Among the advantages claimed by this Grammar I may mention the following:—

It will save the student from wasting his valuable time in learning many abstruse rules and numberless exceptions, which would be useless to him for all practical purposes.

The student will find herein every Italian word either marked with an accent on the vowel which bears the stress, or, if written without an accent, he will know that such word bears the stress on the penultimate syllable. Thus one of the great difficulties of pronunciation is surmounted.

By the new and clear arrangement of the three conjugations, their slight variations and their numerous similarities are brought prominently forward; and with the help of such simplified arrangement the verbs can be easily learned. :

The different ways of pronouncing the vowels *e* and *o*—a puzzling question, which is likely to remain ever unsettled even in Italy, where their pronunciation is markedly different, not only in each province, but in each town—are here purposely ignored. There is no reason why the English student should waste his time in trying to solve difficult questions, on which Italians themselves have “an open mind.” A native teacher will practically help the student better than twenty pages of distracting rules and exceptions.

Another question which will ever remain undecided in Italy is, whether to use *Lei* or *Voi* in conversation. *Lei* really

means: "Your Lordship" and "Your Ladyship," and not only requires the verb in the third person singular like its English equivalents, but also needs its adjectives put in the feminine gender, even when speaking to a man. In Tuscany it is used indiscriminately in addressing everybody, whether a duke or a dustman, with complete indifference and unconscious humour. But, besides those born in Tuscany and a goodly number of lackadaisical fops in some large towns of Northern Italy, there are nearly thirty millions of other Italians who never use *Lei* for *Voi*. This indiscriminate use of *Lei* is a ridiculous remnant of the Spanish domination, and has contributed not a little to the decadence of the country. Even sensible Tuscans rebel against it, as did Giuseppe Giusti, the greatest of all Tuscan poets of the nineteenth century, whose letter to Alessandro Manzoni, the great Italian novelist, is printed at the end of this volume. For these reasons I have generally used the second person plural in the Exercises, though the student might practise now and then changing it into the third person singular, and make use of *Lei* instead of *Voi*.

The second person singular *Tu*, Thou, is commonly used throughout Italy.

The student, being thus warned that this Grammar contains only what is absolutely indispensable to him for learning Italian, must acquire a complete mastery of every rule given herein. To illustrate these rules, numerous Exercises have been prepared by Miss Beatrice Elliot and Miss Ida Nix, who also wrote the few Letters at the end of this volume, and to whom I gratefully acknowledge my obligation. My long experience has taught me that Exercises are indispensable in learning a language, however tiresome may be the work of doing them.

To encourage the student in his work, I can assure him that learning Italian is one of the easiest studies he could

undertake; and in support of this assurance I shall mention the following anecdote:—

Fifteen years ago a powerful and important gentleman had a son who, wishing to enter the India Civil Service, had to pass an examination by the Civil Service Commission. Now, it happened—what is unfortunately too usual—that this son did not possess the same amount of brains which had gained for his father such a prominent position in the service of his country; in fact, the son was considered, even by his own fond parent, to be rather stupid. ‘How to pass a stiff examination was a serious question to solve, and it was solved in the only possible way at that time—by sending the young man to some famous and successful “crammers.” But even these clever gentlemen could not put into the candidate’s head what he was unable to understand; and, when examined, he failed in all subjects except Italian, which proved to be the easiest of all subjects at that examination.

I cannot better conclude this Preface than with the words of the late Marquis of Dufferin and Ava, British Ambassador to Italy, who thus wrote about the desirability—nay, necessity—of acquiring a knowledge of at least one modern European language:—

“In most European countries the children of the upper classes generally know two languages, besides their own, before they are ten years old. In Russia they all know three, and this independently of other studies. What is to prevent the British youth doing as much by the time he is twenty? The late John Stuart Mill was, I believe, of opinion that it is a waste of time to learn a foreign language out of the country in which it is spoken, and in this view I am inclined to agree, if there is any prospect of the student ever being in a position to visit for a certain number of months the country in question; but, even so, it would be well for him to obtain

some slight knowledge of it beforehand. Inasmuch, however, as it is only the minority of young men to whom it is possible to reside abroad, instruction in one European tongue should, I think, be made an essential element in education.

"I say that to the ordinary student who has not some special prospect of being connected during his future career with German interests, it would be good economy to permit German and to be content with French and Italian. With regard to the latter, I would observe that it is an easy language, either to learn to speak or to learn to read, to any one with a knowledge of French or of Latin. Nor, indeed, is there very much difficulty in acquiring a sufficient knowledge of it to run through the Italian newspapers, or to enable one to make known all one's needs as a traveller. But when you come to read Dante and the great Italian classics, the case is different. Still, it is a lovely tongue, and its mediæval literature is equally rich and interesting.

"And now I wonder whether I could be of any use in giving any hints as to how a modern language is to be learned.

"It seems to me that the first thing to do is to acquire some knowledge of its vocabulary. There are various ways of doing this. The late Dr. Schliemann, who was undoubtedly a very apt linguist, used, I believe, to take some good book written in the tongue he wished to acquire, and learned off a certain number of pages in it by heart; but this is a process which it requires a peculiar capacity to accomplish. The great Duke of Wellington learned Spanish out of a Spanish Prayer Book once given him by the famous old ladies of Langollen. What I would recommend is this—to inquire for some work in the language which is both easy and entertaining, and then to get a native to read it out to you aloud, and to tell you *viva voce* every word that you do

not know, while you mark the unknown word on your own copy as you go on. If this living dictionary is not within your reach, then I would say—though I tremble as I utter the word—provide yourself with a good crib. Of course, these markings would occur under almost every word in the first chapter, perhaps under every other word in the second, and in a third of the words in the third, fourth, and fifth; but before you got half through the book the interruptions would gradually diminish, for every author has a vocabulary of his own, outside of which he does not travel; and probably by the time you had got through two-thirds of the work you would find yourself able to finish the volume without any assistance. In a novel, say of two volumes or of 600 pages, there will probably be 3000 words about which you have had to inquire, and which you will have marked. Of these you should make a list, either in writing or, what perhaps is better still, through the medium of a type-writer, after which you should learn them by heart. A person with a fair memory should be able, without sacrificing much time to the business, to master 40 words a day, so that 3000 words could be acquired in about three months. When this process has been accomplished, you will find that you will be able to take up any ordinary book in the language in question and read it, I will not say with fluency, but, at all events, without that sense of intolerable irksomeness which oppresses us when we have to puzzle through each successive sentence with the aid of a dictionary. If going through the first book has not been found sufficient to enable us to read the succeeding book with ease, the original process can be again repeated until our vocabulary has become so enlarged as to render it altogether unnecessary. Of course I do not mean to imply that in the course of the foregoing operation we are to neglect the Grammar; but my own experience has taught me that, although it may be necessary to run through some

elementary Grammar of the language, the task of acquiring a comprehensive, intimate, and intelligent knowledge of its rules will be much more rapidly and thoroughly accomplished after we are able to embrace at a glance the meaning of a sentence and the relation to each other of the various words which compose it; for, at this stage, those grammatical rules, which at first it seemed very difficult for the memory to retain, soon impress themselves instinctively upon one's attention.

“Another advantage accruing from this method of writing down as you go along a list of the words you do not readily remember is that if, through disuse for years, absence from the country, or other accidental circumstance, you in a great measure forget a language which you have once learned, a very slight re-study of your vocabularies will enable you to recover it.

“There is another point to which I may refer—namely, the acquisition of a good accent. Here, again, certain persons are endowed with greater aptitudes than others, for it will be generally, not always, found that those who have a good ear for music have also a happy knack of acquiring a right pronunciation. But even those who cannot whistle a tune need not be discouraged on this account, for, with a little care and attention, they also will be able to attain the desired object. Of course, the only way to do this is by constantly listening to the language in question spoken around them. I would therefore strongly advise the student, even should he have learned to read or write Italian readily, to avoid every attempt at pronouncing it in his own uninstructed manner, for it is almost impossible to get rid of the wrong pronunciation of a word or of a bad accent when once one has acquired it. If, however, there is an Italian teacher handy, the best plan would be to make him either talk to you or read to you out aloud, and then, when you have in a certain degree

accustomed your ear to his pronunciation, to read out aloud to him. But this latter process will have to be pursued very diligently and for a great length of time, and the words you cannot pronounce should be written down, and you should be constantly repeating them to yourself, for in this way you will find your mouth and your vocal organs gradually mould themselves to the sweet Italian accent."

LUIGI RICCI.

38 CONDUIT STREET, LONDON, W ,
September 1904.

ITALIAN GRAMMAR.

PRONUNCIATION.

1. Every letter in the Italian language is sounded.
2. There are no diphthongs, nor is the sound of a vowel ever modified (see Preface).
3. The vowels are *a* as in *bath*, *e* as in *press*, *i* as in *bit*, *o* as in *note*, and *u* as *oo* in *book*.
4. The consonants are pronounced as in English, with the following exceptions:

c = k before *a*, *o*, *u*, as *ca*, *co*, *cu*.

c = ch before *e* or *i*, as *ce*, *ci*.

ch = k before *e* or *i*, as *che*, *chi*.

g hard before *a*, *o*, *u*, as in *ga*, *go*, *gu*.

g soft before *e* or *i*, as in *ge*, *gi*.

gh hard before *e* or *i*, as in *ghe*, *ghi*.

h is used

(A) to harden the sound of *c* or *g* before *e* or *i*.

(B) to distinguish the meaning of the following four words, which are the only ones beginning with an *h*: *ho* (I have), *hai* (thou hast), *ha* (has), *hanno* (they have), from *o* (or), *ai* (to the), *a* (to or at), *anno* (year). In these four words the *h* is used as an orthographical sign and is not aspirated.

j is obsolete, but when it occurs is pronounced like *i*.

k, *w*, *x*, *y* are not found in the Italian alphabet, which has the following letters: *a*, *b*, *c*, *d*, *e*, *f*, *g*, *h*, *i*, *l*, *m*, *n*, *o*, *p*, *q*, *r*, *s*, *t*, *u*, *v*, *z*.

5. The pronunciation of *gl* before an *i*, and of *gn* before any vowel, has no exact equivalent in the English language, and should be learned *viva voce* from a native.

6. Italian words bear the stress on the—

- (A) last syllable, as *carità*. A word belonging to this class is called *tronca* (cut), because it has lost its final syllable from the old spelling *caritate*, and the Italian accent (') is placed on its final vowel to retain the stress in the same place as in the original word.
- (B) penultimate syllable, as *amore*, called *piana* (smooth). The great majority of Italian words belong to this class, and are written without any accent
- (C) antepenultimate syllable, as *corrispondere*, called *sdruc-ciola* (sliding). To help the student, these words will be printed here with an acute accent ('), but such an accent should never be written in Italian.

ORTHOGRAPHY.

1. Italian words end with a vowel (with very few exceptions).

2. If the final vowel is preceded by *l*, *n*, or *r* it may be dropped without its being replaced by an apostrophe, as *ciel* for *cielo*, *ben* for *bene*, *amar* for *amare*. When the final vowel is preceded by *ll*, *nn*, or *rr*, if we drop the final vowel we must also drop one of the double consonants, as *bel* for *bello*, *dan* for *danno*, *tor* for *torre*.

3. Feminines ending in *a* are excepted from the above rule (No. 2). These, as well as other Italian words, may drop the final vowel if an apostrophe is used in place of the omitted vowel. A final vowel bearing the accent is never dropped.

4. The letter *s* is never found in Italian between two consonants, and when followed by a consonant is called *s impure*.

5. If the final vowel of a word is the same as the initial vowel of the next word, that vowel must be dropped and replaced by an apostrophe, as *quest' orologio* (and not *questo orologio*).

6. If the final vowel of a word is³ different from the initial vowel of the next word its elision is optional, as *quell' uccello* or *quello uccello*.

7. There is only one accent in Italian ('), and it is used
- (A) to distinguish the meanings of similar words, as *è* (is) from *e* (and), *dì* (day) from *di* (of), etc.
 - (B) to denote the loss of a final syllable, as *carità* for *caritate*.
 - (C) on a monosyllable, when subjoined to another word, as *virerè* (*vice re*), *affinchè* (*a fine che*).

8. If a monosyllable, or a word ending with an accentuated vowel is prefixed to another word, the latter doubles its first letter, and the accent is omitted; as *sissignore* (*sì signore*), *fallo* (*fa lo*), *ameracci* (*amerà ci*). When the second word begins with a vowel, *s* impure (*i.e.*, *s* followed by a consonant), or with *gl*, the first letter of the second word is not doubled.

THE ARTICLE.

1. The English definite article *the* has in Italian a masculine and a feminine form, and a singular and a plural number.

			Masc.		Fem.
Sing.	...	...	Il	—	La
Pl.	...	...	I	—	Le

2. As the letter *s* never occurs between two consonants, *il* becomes *lo* (plur. *gli*) before masculine nouns or adjectives beginning with an *s* impure, *lo specchio*, *gli specchi*. *Lo* is also used before a vowel.

3. The apostrophe is freely used with the definite article (see Ortho. 5 and 6), and thus we have these ten different forms of it:

			Masc.		Fem.
°Sing.	...	...	Il, lo, l'	—	La, l' }
Pl.	...	...	I, gli, gl'	—	Le, l' }

} = *the*.

4. *Gli* takes an apostrophe only when preceding a word beginning with an *i* (Pron. 5).

THE ARTICLE.

5. The English indefinite article *a* or *an* is rendered by *uno* (m.), *una* (fem.). *Uno* and *una* are also written *un* and *un'* (Orth. 2, 3).

N.B.—In the following exercises the student should be careful to observe the practical illustrations of the above rules.

Present Indicative of the Verb "to have."

Io ho, I have.

tu hai, thou hast.

egli ha, he has.

ella ha, she has.

la casa, the house.

la camera, the room.

il ragazzo, the boy.

il cane, the dog.

il guanto, the glove.

il cavallo, the horse.

il libro, the book.

la bambola, the doll.

la madre, the mother.

l'anima, the soul.

l'amica, the friend(f).

la zia, the aunt.

Noi abbiamo, we have.

voi avete, you have.

eglino hanno, they (m.) have.

elleno hanno, they (f.) have.

il tetto, the roof.

la porta, the door.

la ragazza, the girl.

il cappello, the hat.

l'anello, the ring.

la penna, the pen.

il fratello, the brother.

la sorella, the sister.

lo specchio, the looking-glass.

l'orologio, the watch.

lo zio, the uncle.

la nipote, the niece.

I.

1. La casa ha un tetto. 2. La camera ha una porta. 3. Il ragazzo ha un cane. 4. Io ho un cappello. 5. Tu hai il guanto. 6. Ella ha un anello. 7. Noi abbiamo un cavallo. 8. Voi avete la penna. 9. Eglino hanno il libro. 10. Elleno hanno un fratello. 11. La ragazza ha una bambola. 12. Noi abbiamo una sorella.

1. I have a mother. 2. We have a looking-glass. 3. Thou hast a dog. 4. You have a room. 5. He has a soul. 6. They (f.) have the looking-glass. 7. They (m.) have the dog. 8. She has the watch. 9. The aunt has a friend (f.). 10. The friend (f.) has a looking-glass. 11. The uncle has a dog. 12. The aunt has a niece.

Present Indicative of the Verb "to have" used interrogatively.

Ho io? have I?
hai tu? hast thou?
ha egli? has he?
ha ella? has she?

il bastone, the stick.
no, no.
e, ed, before vowels, and.
il giornale, the newspaper.
la lettera, the letter.
il fiore, the flower.
il giardino, the garden.
il sorcio, the mouse.
la lanterna, the lantern.
l'osso, the bone.
l'allievo (m.), l'allieva (f.), the pupil.
il coltello, the knife.
signore, sir.
la frusta, the whip.

Abbiamo noi? have we?
avete voi? have you?
hanno egli? have they? (m.).
hanno elleno? have they? (f.).

sì, yes.
anche, also.
che, what.
lo zucchero, the sugar.
il pomo, la mela, the apple.
il gatto, the cat.
la sedia, the chair.
la lampada, the lamp.
la signora, the lady.
la forchetta, the fork.
ma, but.
l'amico, the friend (m.).
esso (m.), he, it.
essa (f.), she, it.

II.

1. Ha egli un bastone? 2. No, egli ha una frusta. 3. Ha ella uno zio? Sì, ed anche una zia. 4. Hai tu il giornale? 5. Che avete voi? Io ho una lettera. 6. Hanno egli lo zucchero? 7. Ha ella un fiore? No, ella ha un pomo. 8. Avete voi un giardino? 9. Ha il gatto un sorcio? 10. Abbiamo noi una sedia? 11. Ha il ragazzo la lanterna? No, egli ha la lampada. 12. Hanno elleno un fratello?

1. What has the dog? 2. It has a bone. 3. Has the lady a knife? No, she has a fork. 4. Have you a pupil? 5. Yes; I have a pupil (m.). 6. Have we the looking-glass? 7. I have one looking-glass. 8. Hast thou an uncle? No, but I have an aunt. 9. The friend (m.) has a dog. Have you a dog? 10. No, sir; but the uncle has a dog. 11. They (f.) have a cat, but we have a dog and a horse. 12. Has she the sugar? No, sir.

THE NOUN.

1. All nouns form their plural by changing the final vowel into *i*: *il clima, i climi*; *il paese, i paesi*; *la sete, le seti*; *il brindisi, i brindisi*; *la crisi, le crisi*; *il vetro, i vetri*; *la mano, le mani*. But if the singular ends with an *a* and is also feminine, then the plural is formed by changing the final *a* into *e*, as *la casa, le case*. Nouns ending in *io*, with no stress on the *i*, form their plural by dropping the final *o*, as *il bacio, i baci*; but if the stress is on the *i*, the plural is formed regularly, as *il mormorio, i mormorii*.

2. If the singular ends with an accented vowel it does not change in the plural: *la verità, le verità* (Orth. 7B).

2A. Nouns ending in *ca, ga, go* take an *h* in the plural in order to preserve the hard sound of the singular: *il duca, i duchi*; *la paga, le paghe*; *l'ago, gli aghi*. Except those in *ologo, teologo, teologi*.

2B. Nouns in *co*

(A) if of two syllables take *h* in the plural: *il fico, i fichi* (except *greco, greci*; *porco, porci*).

(B) of more than two syllables take no *h* in the plural: *l'amico, gli amici*, with very few exceptions.

3. The few nouns ending with a consonant in the singular remain also unchanged in the plural: *il lapis, i lapis*; *lo specimen, gli specimen*.

4. Monosyllabic nouns and nouns ending in *ie* remain also unchanged in the plural: *il re, i re*; *la specie, le specie*.

5. Names of trees are masculine: *il pero*, the pear-tree; and the name of the fruit is feminine: *la pera*, the pear; except *il fico*, the fig-tree, and also the fig; *il dattero*, the palm-tree and the date; *il gelso*, the mulberry-tree and the mulberry; *l'ananasso*, the pineapple-tree and the pineapple; *il limone*, the lemon and the lemon-tree.

6. The following form their plural irregularly: *il Dio, gli Dei*; *l'uomo, gli uomini*; *il bue, i buoi*; *la moglie, le mogli*.

7. There are some nouns which have a masculine as well as a feminine plural to distinguish the two different meanings of the same word. A list of the most commonly used follows:—

<i>Singular.</i>		<i>Plural.</i>
<i>il braccio</i> , arm, yard-measure.	<i>i bracci</i> , yards.	<i>le braccia</i> , arms.
<i>il cervello</i> , mind, brain.	<i>i cervelli</i> , minds.	<i>le cervella</i> , brains.
<i>il corno</i> , cornet, horn.	<i>i corni</i> , cornets.	<i>le corna</i> , horns.
<i>il frutto</i> , result, fruit.	<i>i frutti</i> , results.	<i>le frutta</i> , fruits.
<i>il membro</i> , member, limb.	<i>i membri</i> , members.	<i>le membra</i> , limbs.
<i>il riso</i> , rice, laughter.	<i>i risi</i> , rice.	<i>le risa</i> , laughter.
<i>il legno</i> , wood, ship.	<i>i legni</i> , ships.	<i>le legna</i> , firewood.

8. The following nouns are only used in the singular:—

<i>la contraddote</i> , the marriage settlement.	<i>la mane</i> , the morning.
<i>il (medio) evo</i> , the middle ages.	<i>la roba</i> , the property.
	<i>la stirpe</i> , the progeny, etc.

9. The following nouns have no singular:—

<i>gli annali</i> , annals.	<i>le molle</i> , tongs.
<i>i baffi</i> , moustache.	<i>i mostacchi</i> , moustache.
<i>le basette</i> , whiskers.	<i>le nozze</i> , nuptials.
<i>i calzoni</i> , trousers.	<i>i posteri</i> , posterity.
<i>i dolci</i> , sweetmeats.	<i>le spezie</i> , spices.
<i>l'esequie</i> , funeral.	<i>gli sponsali</i> , betrothal.
<i>le forbici</i> , scissors.	<i>le tenebre</i> , darkness.
<i>i maggiori</i> , ancestors.	<i>i vanni</i> , pinions.
<i>le masserizie</i> , furniture.	<i>i viveri</i> , provisions, etc.

10. The following masculine nouns have an irregular feminine plural in *a*:—

<i>Singular, mas.</i>	<i>Plural, fem.</i>
<i>il centinaio</i> , the hundred.	<i>le centinaia</i> , the hundreds.
<i>il dito</i> , the finger.	<i>le dita</i> , the fingers.
<i>il ginocchio</i> , the knee.	<i>le ginocchia</i> , the knees.
<i>il labbro</i> , the lip.	<i>le labbra</i> , the lips.
<i>il miglio</i> , the mile.	<i>le miglia</i> , the miles.
<i>il migliaio</i> , the thousand.	<i>le migliaia</i> , the thousands.
<i>il moggio</i> , the bushel.	<i>le moggia</i> , the bushels.
<i>il muro</i> , the wall.	<i>le mura</i> , the walls.
<i>il paio</i> , the pair.	<i>le paia</i> , the pairs.
<i>il quadrello</i> , the arrow.	<i>le quadrella</i> , the arrows.
<i>lo staio</i> , the bushel.	<i>le staia</i> , the bushels.
<i>l'uovo</i> , the egg.	<i>le uova</i> , the eggs.

11. There being no rules for distinguishing the gender of nouns, the following hints may be found useful:—Nouns ending in *a* are generally feminine, though nearly a fifth of their number is masculine. Of nouns ending in *e* there are as many masculine as feminine. Those ending in *i* are feminine, with very few exceptions; and so also are nouns that end in *u*. All nouns ending in *o* are masculine, with the single exception of *la mano*.

<i>uno</i> , one.	<i>l'uomo</i> , the man.
<i>due</i> , two.	<i>il castello</i> , the castle.
<i>tre</i> , three.	<i>la serva</i> , the servant
<i>quattro</i> , four.	<i>oggi</i> , to-day.
<i>cinque</i> , five.	<i>veduto, visto</i> , seen.
<i>sei</i> , six.	<i>il duca</i> , the duke.
<i>il pollice</i> , the thumb.	<i>non</i> , not.
<i>la pera</i> , the pear.	<i>l'ago</i> , the needle.
	<i>la mano</i> , the hand.

III.

1. I fratelli hanno una sorella. 2. Il gatto ha tre sorci.
 3. Noi abbiamo tre cavalli ed un cane. 4. I buoi hanno corna.
 5. Io ho veduto i legni. 6. La mano ha quattro dita ed un pollice.
 7. Voi avete i dolci. 8. Avete voi le lettere? No, io ho i giornali.
 9. Il ragazzo ha i pomi e le pere. 10. Ha ella veduto i tre uomini? No, ella ha veduto un uomo.
 11. L'uomo ha cinque case. 12. Gli uomini hanno veduto il castello.

1. The men have the apples. 2. Have you three brothers?
 3. Yes, I have three brothers and two sisters. 4. The servant (*f.*) has not seen the eggs.
 5. The hands have fingers. 6. Have you seen the needles? No, madam.
 7. I have seen three houses to-day. 8. Have you seen the castle? I have seen the two castles.
 9. He has not seen the letter. 10. Have you a horse? 11. We have four horses.
 12. The lady has five horses.

<i>sette</i> , seven.	<i>il filo</i> , the thread.
<i>l'uovo</i> , the egg.	<i>la scalinata</i> , the staircase.
<i>il sacco</i> , the sack.	<i>il lapis</i> , the pencil.
<i>l'uccello</i> , the bird.	<i>il mago</i> , the magician.
<i>soltanto</i> , only.	<i>il zolfanello</i> , the match.

IV.

1. Ha il cane gli ossi? Sì egli ha quattro ossi. 2. Io ho due bastoni, un coltello e tre quadrella. 3. Avete voi visto il castello? Soltanto le mura. 4. La ragazza ha un cane e due gatti. 5. Ella ha tre aghi ed il filo. 6. La casa ha due porte, sette finestre ed una scalinata. 7. La madre ha tre sorelle. 8. Noi abbiamo i fiori e la mela. 9. Avete voi un uovo? Sì, io ho tre uova. 10. Ella ha due anelli. 11. L'uomo ha due buoi ed un cavallo. 12. Io ho due lapis ed una penna.

1. Have you seen the bird? I have seen one bird. 2. I have not seen the magicians. 3. The man has two sacks. 4. Have you two matches? I have one match. 5. He has the newspaper. 6. Has he also the hat? No, sir. 7. The magician has five matches. 8. The mother has four or five needles. 9. I have one horse. 10. Have you also a dog? 11. Yes, I have five dogs. 12. The brothers have three dogs, two horses, and five cats.

Declension of the Noun.

1. Nouns are declined by the help of the following prepositions:—*di*, of; *a*, to, at; *da*, from, by; *fra*, *tra*, among; *in*, in; *su*, on, upon; *per*, for, by, through; *con*, with.

2. Prepositions when followed by the definite article are not only joined to but also contracted with it, as shown in the following table:—

	<i>Masc.</i>	<i>Sing.</i>	<i>F. Sing.</i>	<i>Masc. Plur.</i>	<i>F. Plur.</i>	
	il	lo	la	i	gli	le
di	del	dello	della	dei	degli	delle
a	al	allo	alla	ai	agli	alle
da	dal	dallo	dalla	dai	dagli	dalle
in	nel	nello	nella	nei	negli	nelle
su	sul	sullo	sulla	sui	sugli	sulle
per	pel	pello	pella	pei	pegli	pelle
con	col	collo	colla	coi	cogli	colle
						the
						of the
						to the
						from the
						in the
						on the
						for the
						with the

3. *Per*, *tra*, *fra*, and *con* are not usually joined to the article. *Da*, used idiomatically, is often used to mean "at the house of."

**Present Indicative of the Auxiliary Verb "Essere,"
to be.**

io sono, I am.

tu sei, thou art.

egli è, he is.

ella è, she is.

il padre, the father.

il figlio, the son.

la lavagna, the slate.

qui, here.

il cugino, the cousin (*m.*).

noi siamo, we are.

voi siete, you are.

eglino sono, they (*m.*) are.

elleno sono, they (*f.*) are.

la scimmia, the monkey.

la finestra, the window.

dove, ove, wherè.

il pittore, the painter (*m.*).

il sale, the salt.

V.

1. Dov' è la lavagna del ragazzo? 2. Il padre della ragazza è qui. 3. Io ho visto l'amico dello zio. 4. Egli ha il bastone del padre. 5. Dov' è la casa del pittore? 6. Egli ha il coltello dell' allievo. 7. La sedia della signora è qui ed anche il libro. 8. Eglino hanno i cavalli degli zii. 9. Voi avete i gatti delle amiche. 10. I libri del cugino sono qui. 11. Gli aghi delle serve non sono qui. 12. I figli degli amici hanno tre cani e due cavalli.

1. Where are the horses? 2. Here is the painter's house.¹ 3. Where are the boys' four hats. They are not here. 4. Where are the lady's two sons? 5. The master's newspaper is in the pupil's (*m.*) room. 6. The rooms of a house. 7. The windows of a room. 8. Where is the salt? Here, sir. 9. Have you seen the duke's horses? 10. No; but I have seen the four dogs the two monkeys, and the three cats. 11. Where are the monkeys? Not here. 12. The painter's book is here.

ecco, here is, here are.

dato, given.

io do, I give.

la cugina (f.), the cousin.

il regalo, the present.

il viaggiatore, the traveller.

io amo, I love, I like.

il maestro, the master.

il vizzo di perle, the pearl necklace.

la figlia, the daughter.

il fucile, the gun.

la viola, the violet.

il braccialetto, the bracelet.

la pittura, the painting.

il dottore, the doctor.

che, who, which, what.

¹ This possessive form is not found in Italian, and must be turned into "the house of the painter," "the two sons of the lady," "the newspaper of the master," etc.

VI.

1. Io ho dato un vizzo di perle all' amica. 2. Io do il coltello all' uomo, ed il filo alla figlia. 3. Avete voi dato uno specchio alla cugina? 4. Io ho dato alla madre un lapis. 5. Il padre ha dato due cavalli allo zio. 6. Egli ha dato agli amici due fucili. 7. Le ragazze hanno dato alle madri i fiori e le pere. 8. Eglino hanno dato i libri al maestro. 9. Ho io dato un regalo all' amica del duca? 10. No, voi avete dato un' anello alla sorella del duca. 11. Fgli ha dato le mele alla ragazza. 12. Eglino hanno dato un cavallo ed un cane al viaggiatore.

1. Have you given a stick to the brother? 2. Who has the painter's hat? 3. I give apples to the horses. 4. Here is the bracelet that the aunt has given to the cousin (*f.*). 5. The friend (*m.*) is not here. 6. I do not like the painting. 7. Have you given the newspaper to the doctor? I have not seen the newspaper. 8. Where are the hat and the gloves? 9. The brother has seen the gloves, sir. 10. Who has given the dog a bone? (a bone to the dog). 11. Cousin George, sir. 12. I give apples to the boy to-day.

Imperfect Tense of "Avere."

io aveva, I had.
tu avevi, thou hadst.
egli aveva, he had.
ella aveva, she had.

noi avevamo, we had.
voi avevate, you had.
églino avevano, they (*m.*) had.
élleno avevano, they (*f.*) had.

The letter *v* in the termination of the Imperfect Tense of the Indicative may be dropped in all verbs except in those of the first conjugation; and thus we can say—*aveva* and *avea*, *temeva* and *temea*, *sentiva* and *sentia*, *avévano* and *avéano*, *temévano* and *teméano*, *sentivano* and *sentiano*.

N.B.—The Third Person plural of all Tenses, except the Future, is pronounced *sdrucchiola* (Pron. 6c).

io vengo, I come.
io vado, I go.
Roma, Rome.
egli viene, he comes.
Posteria, the inn.
il bosco, the wood.

il teatro, the theatre.
la strada, the street.
onde, donde, whence.
l'albergo, the hotel.
la scuola, the school.
la chiesa, the church.

<i>la ferrovia</i> , the railway.	<i>la città</i> , the city.
<i>il prete</i> , the priest.	<i>il ventaglio</i> , the fan.
<i>egli va</i> , he goes.	<i>il prato</i> , the meadow.
<i>il ragazzo</i> , the child.	<i>la sella</i> , the saddle.
<i>la bottega</i> , the shop.	<i>l'ufficio della posta</i> , post-office.
<i>la pioggia</i> , the rain.	<i>domani</i> , to-morrow.
<i>in capo di</i> , at the end of.	<i>il bagaglio</i> , the luggage.
<i>l'abito</i> , the coat, the dress.	<i>il presidente</i> , the president.
<i>ora</i> , hour, now.	<i>eglino vengono</i> , they come.
<i>la campagna</i> , the country.	<i>quando</i> , when.
	<i>l'ufficio</i> , the office.

VII.

1. Io vengo dalla chiesa. 2. Io vado dalla città di Roma alla campagna. 3. La madre viene dal teatro. 4. La cugina della zia viene dal castello. 5. Io vado all'osteria dov'è il viaggiatore. 6. Io vengo dalla strada. 7. Egli viene dal giardino. 8. Il duca viene dal castello alla casa dello zio. 9. Ella viene dal bosco. 10. Io ho un libro dall'amico del fratello. 11. Io vado con la madre alla casa del pittore. 12. Il servo viene con un regalo del padre.

1. He comes here to-day. 2. He comes from the railway. 3. I go to church. 4. Who comes from the city? The uncle. 5. The letter from the mother is here. 6. I go with a sister to the aunt's house. 7. He goes with the horses. 8. Where is he? He is now coming¹ from the hotel. 9. I am going to the mother. 10. The aunt is with two cousins (*f.*) 11. When does my brother come? 12. He comes from the city with the cousin.

VIII.

1. L'allieva viene alla scuola oggi. 2. Io vado col prete alla chiesa. 3. Egli va alla città coi ragazzi. 4. Il ventaglio è sulla sedia. 5. Egli è qui con un cugino e due sorelle. 6. Io vado pel bosco al prato. 7. Il servo non ha veduto la sella del cavallo. 8. La lettera è nell'ufficio della posta.

¹ The English forms, "I am going," "I do go," and "I go," can be translated only in one way into Italian, *io vado*; and the case is the same with all verbs and all tenses conjugated in English in that way, with the addition of "to be" or "to do."

9. Io vado alla bottega domani. 10. La pioggia viene pel tetto. 11. Il servo va alla ferrovia col bagaglio del signore. 12. Elleno sono alla casa del presidente oggi.

1. Where are the mother and the aunts? 2. They come from the church. 3. Where is the church? At the end of the street. 4. The hat is not here. 5. I have seen the hat with the coat. 6. Have you seen the fan to-day? Yes. 7. The servant goes to the railway. 8. When does my uncle come? 9. He comes from the office in the city to-day. 10. The newspaper is with the hat. 11. Where are they? 12. The servant has not seen the hat to-day.

il danaro, the money.

la noce, the walnut.

il vino, the wine.

il tè, the tea.

l'uva, the grape.

il mercato, the market.

il panc, the bread.

il banco, the bank.

il buffetto, the sideboard.

il biglietto, the ticket.

la spilla, the pin.

stanotte, to-night.

il caffè, the coffee.

il vaso, the vase.

la ciriegia, the cherry.

l'errore, the mistake.

lo sbaglio, the mistake.

l'inchiostro, the ink.

la canestra, the basket.

il formaggio, the cheese.

nè, nor.

la birra, the beer.

ci, vi, there.

4. "Some" and "any" are rendered by *del, dello, della, delle*.

IX.

1. Egli ha del danaro nel banco. 2. Io ho delle nòci nel buffetto. 3. Ha egli del vino? Sì, signore. 4. Noi abbiamo dei biglietti pel teatro. 5. Io amo cani ed uccelli. 6. Avete voi del tè? No, ma io ho del caffè. 7. Ella ha nella casa pitture, vasi e libri. 8. Noi avevamo delle ciriege e delle uve. 9. Voi avete delle mele nel giardino. 10. Egli aveva degli errori nell' esercizio. 11. Io ho dato libri, lapis ed inchiostro al fratello. 12. Avete voi delle spille?

1. I have seen some walnuts at the market. 2. I do not like walnuts. 3. Where is the basket of apples? 4. I have some cherries here, and also some pears. 5. I like tea and coffee. 6. Have you given the aunt some wine? 7. Have

you seen the pine-apples which I have given to the mother? 8. He has no money here. 9. I come from the garden where (there) are pears. 10. He has some bread and cheese in a basket. 11. She has some coffee but he has tea. 12. Has he no wine nor beer? No, sir.

il bicchiere, the glass.

la sorgente, the spring.

il mendicante, the beggar.

la bottiglia, the bottle.

la pelle, the leather.

l'argento, the silver.

l'oro, the gold.

la seta, the silk.

il legno, the wood.

l'acciaio, the steel.

l'acqua, the water.

la tazza, the cup.

il conto, the bill.

l'involto, the packet.

l'avorio, the ivory.

la scatola, the box.

il calamaio, the inkstand.

l'ebano, the ebony.

la favola, the fable.

X.

1. Io aveva un bicchiere d'acqua della sorgente. 2. Egli ha dato al mendicante una tazza di tè. 3. La casa dell' uomo è sul colle. 4. Ella ha dato alla zia una bottiglia di vino. 5. Aveva ella l'involto degli aghi? 6. Dov' è la ragazza? Ella è nella casa della zia. 7. Egli ha un bastone d'avorio. 8. Io ho dato all' uccello dell' acqua. 9. La scatola di pelle è qui. 10. Noi avevamo un calamaio d'argento. 11. L'orologio del ragazzo è d'oro. 12. Elleno hanno degli abiti di seta.

1. I have had a cup of tea in the friend's (f.) room. 2. They have had a gold watch and a gold ring. 3. The cousin's sister has two hats. 4. Where is the servant? 5. I have not seen the servant, sir. 6. He had given the ebony stick to the friend's (m.) brother. 7. The wooden table is in the friend's (m.) house. 8. He has a bottle of wine. 9. The aunt has three steel needles. 10. The brother's boots are here. 11. I had books in the room. 12. He has only three pens.

Carlo, Charles.

Maria, Mary.

la focaccia, the cake.

Giàcomo, James.

Venezia, Venice.

L'Aia, the Hague.

Il Brasile, Brazil.

L'Asia, Asia.

Francesca, Frances.

Giovanni, John.

<i>Londra</i> , London. •	<i>cotto</i> , cooked, baked.
<i>il soldato</i> , the soldier.	<i>il forno</i> , the oven.
<i>la tavola</i> , the table.	<i>Giovanna</i> , Jane.
<i>Napoleone</i> , Napoleon.	<i>la poesia</i> , the poetry.
<i>il Cairo</i> , Cairo.	<i>Parigi</i> , Paris.
<i>La Francia</i> , France.	<i>il luogo natio</i> , the birthplace.
<i>L'Italia</i> , Italy.	<i>il generale</i> , the general.
<i>il Petrarca</i> , Petrarch.	<i>Pietro</i> , Peter.
<i>La Germania</i> , Germany.	<i>il poeta</i> , the poet.
<i>La Spagna</i> , Spain.	<i>Gli Stati Uniti</i> , the United States.
<i>Il Portogallo</i> , Portugal.	<i>Nàpoli</i> , Naples.
<i>Ceylan</i> , Ceylon.	<i>o</i> , or
<i>Pisola</i> , the island.	<i>L'Irlanda</i> , Ireland.
<i>Costanza</i> , Constance.	<i>L'Islanda</i> , Iceland.
<i>la borsa</i> , the purse.	<i>La Cina</i> , China.
<i>L'Africa</i> , Africa.	<i>ieri</i> , yesterday.
<i>sera</i> , evening.	<i>Terranuova</i> , Newfoundland.
<i>La Svezia</i> , Sweden.	<i>là</i> , there.
<i>ancora</i> , still.	<i>il re</i> , the king.
<i>L'Inghilterra</i> , England.	<i>il negoziante</i> , the merchant.
<i>imperatore</i> , emperor.	<i>il continente</i> , the continent.
<i>la regina</i> , the queen.	<i>La Norvegia</i> , Norway.
<i>La Danimarca</i> , Denmark.	• <i>Margherita</i> , Margaret.
<i>L'America</i> , America.	<i>La Còrsica</i> , Corsica.
<i>la perla</i> , the pearl.	<i>La Sicilia</i> , Sicily.
<i>La Sardegna</i> , Sardinia.	<i>Il Giappon</i> , Japan.

5. Names of countries are generally used with the definite article: *L'Inghilterra*, England.

6. With the prepositions *di* and *in* the definite article is usually omitted before the names of countries: *Noi siamo in Inghilterra*, we are in England.

XI.

1. Carlo e Giovanni sono fratelli. 2. Maria aveva cotto la focaccia al forno. 3. Il cappello di Giacomo è qui. 4. Dov'è Giovanna? Ella è a Venezia. 5. La poesia del Tasso è nel libro di Emma. 6. I ragazzi sono a Londra, ma il padre e la madre sono a Parigi. 7. Il soldato viene dall' Inghilterra oggi e non domani. 8. Dove sono i guanti di Francesca? Essi sono sulla tavola. 9. Nella Corsica è il luogo natio di Napoleone. 10. Il generale viene dal Cairo. 11. La regina d'Inghilterra è in Francia. 12. Egli va dalla Russia alla Svizzera.

1. Charles goes to^c Italy. 2. Mary comes from England.
 3. Where are John and Peter? 4. They are coming from Paris to-day. 5. He comes from the church and I come from the school. 6. He is going from Germany to the United States. 7. She is in Rome, but the aunt is in Naples. 8. Where are the brothers? 9. They are now in Spain or Portugal. 10. England, Ceylon, Ireland, and Iceland are islands. 11. The aunt is Charles' mother. 12. You and Charles are cousins.

XII.

1. Dov' è il fratello di Costanza? Egli è in Cina. 2. La borsa di Maria è sulla tavola. 3. Noi avevamo una lettera dall' Africa ieri sera. 4. Il cane viene da Terranuova. 5. Voi avevate una cugina in Olanda, è ella là ancora? 6. Il re d'Inghilterra è anche imperatore d'India. 7. Il vino del negoziante viene dalla Spagna. 8. L'Australia è uno dei cinque continenti. 9. La regina va dalla Norvegia alla Danimarca. 10. La sorella di Margherita è in America. 11. Il vizzo di perle viene da Parigi. 12. Io vengo dall' Aia.

1. John is Mary's brother. 2. Where is Mary now? 3. She is in Corsica, but John is in Brazil. 4. Where is the brother's friend (*m.*)? 5. He is going from India to China. 6. Is Sicily in Italy? 7. Sicily is an island. 8. India is in Asia. 9. Sardinia and Corsica are islands. 10. The aunt is in Cairo. 11. I have a letter from Charles from the Hague. 12. The letter is from Frances at Rome.

The Auxiliary Verb "Avere," to have.

PRESENT TENSE (PRESENTE).

Io ho, I have.

Tu hai, thou hast.

Egli ha, he has.

Noi abbiamo, we have.

Voi avete, you have.

Eglino hanno, they have.

IMPERFECT TENSE (IMPERFETTO).

Io aveva, I had.

Tu avevi, thou hadst.

Egli aveva, he had.

Noi avevamo, we had.

Voi avevate, you had.

Eglino avevano, they had.

PAST DEFINITE TENSE (PASSATO DEFINITO).

<i>Io ebbi</i> , I had.	<i>Noi avemmo</i> , we had.
<i>Tu avesti</i> , thou hadst.	<i>Voi aveste</i> , you had.
<i>Egli ebbe</i> , he had.	<i>Eglino ebbero</i> , they had.

FUTURE TENSE (FUTURO).

<i>Io avrò</i> , I shall have.	<i>Noi avremo</i> , we shall have.
<i>Tu avrai</i> , thou wilt have.	<i>Voi avrete</i> , you will have.
<i>Egli avrà</i> , he will have.	<i>Eglino avranno</i> , they will have.

N.B.—The First and Third Person Singular of the Future Tense are always written with the Italian accent.

COMPOUND TENSES (TEMPI COMPOSTI).

Avuto, had.

PAST INDEFINITE TENSE (PASSATO INDEFINITO).

<i>Io ho avuto</i> , I have had.	<i>Noi abbiamo avuto</i> , we have had.
<i>Tu hai avuto</i> , thou hast had.	<i>Voi avete avuto</i> , you have had.
<i>Egli ha avuto</i> , he has had.	<i>Eglino hanno avuto</i> , they have had.

PLUPERFECT TENSE (PIÙ CHE PERFETTO).

<i>Io aveva avuto</i> , I had had.	<i>Noi avevamo avuto</i> , we had had.
<i>Tu avevi avuto</i> , thou hadst had.	<i>Voi avevate avuto</i> , you had had.
<i>Egli aveva avuto</i> , he had had.	<i>Eglino avevano avuto</i> , they had had.

PAST ANTERIOR TENSE (PASSATO RIMOTO).

<i>Io ebbi avuto</i> , I had had.	<i>Noi avemmo avuto</i> , we had had.
<i>Tu avesti avuto</i> , thou hadst had.	<i>Voi aveste avuto</i> , you had had.
<i>Egli ebbe avuto</i> , he had had.	<i>Eglino ebbero avuto</i> , they had had.

FUTURE ANTERIOR TENSE (FUTURO ANTERIORE).

<i>Io avrò avuto</i> , I shall have had.	<i>Noi avremo avuto</i> , we shall have had.
<i>Tu avrai avuto</i> , thou wilt have had.	<i>Voi avrete avuto</i> , you will have had.
<i>Egli avrà avuto</i> , he will have had.	<i>Eglino avranno avuto</i> , they will have had.

CONDITIONAL MOOD (CONDIZIONALE).

PRESENT TENSE (PRESENTE).

<i>Io avrei</i> , I should have.	<i>Noi avremmo</i> , we should have.
<i>Tu avresti</i> , thou wouldst have.	<i>Voi avreste</i> , you would have.
<i>Egli avrebbe</i> , he would have.	<i>Eglio avrebbero</i> , they would have.

PAST TENSE (PASSATO).

<i>Io avrei avuto</i> , I should have had.	<i>Noi avremmo avuto</i> , we should have had.
<i>Tu avresti avuto</i> , thou wouldst have had.	<i>Voi avreste avuto</i> , you would have had.
<i>Egli avrebbe avuto</i> , he would have had.	<i>Eglio avrebbero avuto</i> , they would have had.

IMPERATIVE MOOD (IMPERATIVO).

<i>Abbi tu</i> , have thou.	<i>Abbiamo noi</i> , let us have.
<i>Abbia egli</i> , let him have.	<i>Abbiate voi</i> , have ye.
	<i>Abbiano eglio</i> , let them have.

The Second Person Singular of the Imperative Negative in all verbs is formed with the Infinitive *Non cantare*, *Non avere*.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD (SOGGIUNTIVO).

PRESENT TENSE (PRESENTE).

<i>Ch'io abbia</i> , that I may have.	<i>Che noi abbiamo</i> , that we may have.
<i>Che tu abbia</i> , that thou mayst have.	<i>Che voi abbiate</i> , that you may have.
<i>Ch'egli abbia</i> , that he may have.	<i>Ch'egliano abbiano</i> , that they may have.

IMPERFECT TENSE (IMPERFETTO).

<i>Se io avessi</i> , if I had.	<i>Se noi avessimo</i> , if we had.
<i>Se tu avessi</i> , if thou hadst.	<i>Se voi aveste</i> , if you had.
<i>S'egli avesse</i> , if he had.	<i>S'egliano avessero</i> , if they had.

PAST TENSE (PASSATO).

Ch'io abbia avuto, that I may have had. *Che noi abbiamo avuto*, that we may have had.
Che tu abbia avuto, that thou mayst have had. *Che voi abbiate avuto*, that you may have had.
Ch'egli abbia avuto, that he may have had. *Ch'eglino abbiano avuto*, that they may have had.

PLUPERFECT TENSE (PIÙ CHE PERFETTO).

Se io avessi avuto, if I had had. *Se noi avéssimo avuto*, if we had had.
Se tu avessi avuto, if thou hadst had. *Se voi aveste avuto*, if you had had.
S'egli avesse avuto, if he had had. *S'eglino avéssero avuto*, if they had had.

INFINITIVE MOOD (INFINITO).

PRESENT (PRESENTE).

avere, to have.

PAST (PASSATO).

aver avuto, to have had.

GERUND (GERUNDIO).

PRESENT (PRESENTE).

avendo, having.

PAST (PASSATO).

avendo avuto, having had.

PARTICIPLES (PARTICIPI).

PRESENT (PRESENTE).

avente, having.

PAST (PASSATO).

Sing., avuto (m.), avuta (f.) } had.
Plur., avuti (m.), avute (f.) }

The Present Participle in all verbs is either obsolete, *avente*, or is used as a noun, *amante*, lover; in its stead the Gerund is always used, *avendo*.

The Past Participle is declined like an Adjective.

Avere is often used to form idiomatic phrases, of which the following are the most common:—

Avere caldo, to be warm.
Avere freddo, to be cold.
Avere fame, to be hungry.

Avere sete, to be thirsty.
Avere ragione, to be right.
Avere torto, to be wrong, etc."

1. The Past Participle used with *avere* may—(A) be left unchanged: *Io ho avuto due mele.*(B) be made to agree with the object: *Io ho avute due mele.*2. The Personal Pronoun is usually dropped before the verb: *Avete un giardino.**lo sciallo*, the shawl.*la carne*, the meat.*il tempo*, the weather.*la punizione*, the punishment.*il funerale*, the funeral.*il fuoco*, the fire.*il fattore*, the farmer.*aver sonno*, to be sleepy.*aver cura*, to take care.*il giorno*, the day.*la riprensione*, the scolding.*la neve*, the snow.*le vacanze*, the holidays.*la settimana*, the week.*la carta*, the paper.*la disgrazia*, the misfortune.*il prigioniero*, the prisoner.*il principe*, the prince.*la disubbidienza*, the disobedience.*la polvere*, the dust.*chi*, who?*aver luogo*, to take place.*aver fretta*, to be in a hurry.*aver paura*, to be afraid.*poichè*, for, since.*ogni*, every, each.*lo stivale*, the boot.*lo scellino*, the shilling.*la caduta*, the fall.*la fine*, the end.*la febbre*, the fever.*il foglio*, the sheet.*l'orecchino*, the ear-ring.*l'attaiuolo*, farmer.

XIII.

1. Noi avremo il pranzo tosto. 2. Elleno avevano il tè nel giardino colla zia. 3. Egli ebbe due fichi. 4. Io avrò una lezione di lingua inglese oggi. 5. Il maestro aveva due allievi ma ora egli ne ha uno soltanto. 6. Noi avremo i libri quando il cugino viene. 7. Voi non avete ancora un anello, ma voi avrete un orologio domani. 8. Io ho dato il messaggio al dottore, egli viene tosto. 9. Noi avemmo del pesce pel pranzo. 10. Il fratello avrà dei regali. 11. Tu avrai un bicchiere di vino. 12. Voi avete della polvere sul cappello.

1. I shall have two sticks. 2. You had three sticks yesterday. 3. Where are they now? 4. Mary has seen the sticks and the hat. 5. The uncle had a newspaper and a book. 6. He has given the book to the cousin (*m.*). 7. They will

have two horses. 8. She had a cup of tea this morning.
 9. I had a glass of wine yesterday. 10. I shall have a watch to-morrow. 11. We had two dogs at the uncle's house.
 12. I shall have a cup of tea in the garden.

XIV.

1. Quando il cavallo viene dal negoziante, io avrò avuto tre regali oggi. 2. Noi avevamo avuto degli stivali dalla bottega.
 3. Il ragazzo ha avuto uno scellino dallo zio. 4. Tu hai avuto una riprensione. 5. Avete voi avuto una lettera dalla madre a Roma oggi? No, ma io aveva due lettere ieri. 6. Noi abbiamo avuto una caduta di neve in Russia. 7. Avrete voi avuto la fine delle vacanze domani? Sì, signore. 8. Eglino avevano avuto un cane nella casa. 9. Il gatto ha avuto un sorcio. 10. Il soldato aveva avuto la febbre. 11. Voi avete avuto dei fiori nel giardino. 12. Noi avremo avuto una vacanza di sei settimane.

1. I have had two books. 2. Will you have had a sheet of paper? 3. He has had some cherries. 4. They had had a misfortune. 5. She has had two rings and three earrings. 6. Will they have had a bottle of wine? No. 7. Mary has had five letters to-day. 8. Had she a letter from John? 9. Yes. John is in Milan. 10. Hast thou had a present? 11. Yes, I have had two presents, a ring and a book. 12. He has had three cups of tea and a glass of beer.

XV.

1. La ragazza ha freddo, ha ella uno sciallo? 2. Il padre ha caldo, egli va nel giardino. 3. Avete voi del pane? Io ho fame. 4. Il maestro ha torto, ma l'allievo ha ragione. 5. Avete voi della carne pella mendicante, ella ha fame? 6. Il ragazzo va alla sorgente, egli ha sete. 7. La zia è a Roma dove il tempo è caldo. 8. Avete voi sete? Avrete voi un bicchiere di vino o d'acqua? 9. La madre del prigioniero aveva ragione. 10. Il funerale del principe ha luogo domani. 11. Voi avete un fuoco, ed avete ragione poichè il tempo è freddo. 12. La zia d'Emma aveva torto.

1. Do you feel cold? No, sir, I feel warm. 2. Who is thirsty? The water is here. 3. The father is going to the city; he is in a hurry. 4. Is she cold? No, madam, she feels warm. 5. Is the sister sleepy? No, she is hungry. 6. Is the child thirsty? Yes; she is going to the spring for some water. 7. Did you feel hungry in the wood? No, sir. 8. The marriage took place to-day. 9. The merchant goes to the city every day. 10. Do not be afraid of the dog. 11. I am not afraid of the dog, but the girl is afraid. 12. The farmer's wife takes care of the son and daughter.

il butirro, the butter.

la fortuna, the fortune.

la terra, earth, the ground.

la colpa, the fault.

andare, to go.

aver piacere, to be glad.

avere a mente, to remember.

camminare, to walk.

confessare, to confess.

sopra, upon.

prima di, before.

il letto, the bed.

la guerra, the war.

il pranzo, the dinner.

la scusa, the excuse.

Paolo, Paul.

finito, ended.

aver cuore, to dare.

aver a grado, to be pleased with.

passato, ended.

aver a male, to take offence.

molto, very.

abile, clever.

XVI.

1. Avete voi cuore di andare nel bosco ora? Sì, signore. 2. Lo zio e la zia hanno avuto una tazza di caffè e del pane e butirro. 3. Egli non ha a grado l'esercizio dell' allievo. 4. Avrete voi piacere quando l'amica della cugina viene? 5. Ella va a letto, ella ha sonno. 6. L'uomo aveva ragione, egli non avrebbe la fortuna della zia. 7. Avrà egli piacere quando la guerra è finita? 8. Che hanno eglino là? Eglino hanno fichi, mele ed uve. 9. La neve è sopra la terra ed i ragazzi hanno freddo. 10. Avete voi fame? No, noi non abbiamo fame. 11. Avete voi paura dei cani? Sì, signore. 12. Ha egli avuto una lettera del cugino? Sì, signore ed egli ha anche avuto un regalo.

1. I shall remember the pears we have seen at the market. 2. He goes from the merchant's house to the church. 3. You were hungry, thirsty, and sleepy before leaving dinner. 4. I am not pleased with the exercise, John. Have you any

excuse? 5. Does he dare walk in the garden where the dog is? 6. What have you there, Charles? I have a hat, a coat, three pairs of gloves and some books. 7. Paul is wrong, but Mary is right. 8. Will you be glad when you have the holidays? 9. Charles is very clever. 10. Do not take offence at the cousin (*m.*). 11. You have brothers, sisters, and cousins. 12. Mary does not dare to confess the fault to the master.

The Auxiliary Verb "Essere," to be.

PRESENT TENSE (PRESENTE).

Io sono, I am.

Tu sei, thou art.

Egli è, he is.

Noi siamo, we are.

Voi siete, you are.

Eglino sono, they are.

IMPERFECT TENSE (IMPERFETTO).

Io era, I was.

Tu eri, thou wast.

Egli era, he was.

Noi eravamo, we were.

Voi eravate, you were.

Eglino erano, they were.

PAST DEFINITE TENSE (PASSATO DEFINITO).

Io fui, I was.

Tu fosti, thou wast.

Egli fu, he was.

Noi fummo, we were.

Voi foste, you were.

Eglino furono, they were.

FUTURE TENSE (FUTURO).

Io sarò, I shall be.

Tu sarai, thou wilt be.

Egli sarà, he will be.

Noi saremo, we shall be.

Voi sarete, you will be.

Eglino saranno, they will be.

COMPOUND TENSES (TEMPI COMPOSTI).

"*Stato*," been.

PAST INDEFINITE TENSE (PASSATO INDEFINITO).

Io sono stato, I have been.

Tu sei stato, thou hast been.

Egli è stato, he has been.

Noi siamo stati, we have been.

Voi siete stati, you have been.*

Eglino sono stati, they have been.

PLUPERFECT TENSE (PIÙ CHE PERFETTO).

<i>Io era stato</i> , I had been.	<i>Noi eravamo stati</i> , we have been.
<i>Tu eri stato</i> , thou hadst been.	<i>Voi eravate stati</i> , you had been.
<i>Egli era stato</i> , he had been.	<i>Eglino erano stati</i> , they had been.

PAST ANTERIOR TENSE (PASSATO RIMOTO).

<i>Io fui stato</i> , I had been.	<i>Noi fummo stati</i> , we had been.
<i>Tu fosti stato</i> , thou hadst been.	<i>Voi foste stati</i> , you had been.
<i>Egli fu stato</i> , he had been.	<i>Eglino furono stati</i> , they had been.

FUTURE ANTERIOR TENSE (FUIURO ANTERIORE).

<i>Io sarò stato</i> , I shall have been.	<i>Noi saremo stati</i> , we shall have been.
<i>Tu sarai stato</i> , thou shalt have been.	<i>Voi sarete stati</i> , you shall have been.
<i>Egli sarà stato</i> , he shall have been.	<i>Eglino saranno stati</i> , they shall have been.

CONDITIONAL MOOD (CONDIZIONALE).

PRESENT TENSE (PRESENTE).

<i>Io sarei</i> , I should be.	<i>Noi saremmo</i> , we should be.
<i>Tu saresti</i> , thou wouldst be.	<i>Voi sareste</i> , you would be.
<i>Egli sarebbe</i> , he would be.	<i>Eglino sarebbero</i> , they would be.

PAST TENSE (PASSATO).

<i>Io sarei stato</i> , I should have been.	<i>Noi saremmo stati</i> , we should have been.
<i>Tu saresti stato</i> , thou wouldst have been.	<i>Voi sareste stati</i> , you would have been.
<i>Egli sarebbe stato</i> , he would have been.	<i>Eglino sarebbero stati</i> , they would have been.

IMPERATIVE MOOD (IMPERATIVO).

<i>Sii tu</i> , be thou.	<i>Siamo noi</i> , let us be.
<i>Sia egli</i> , let him be.	<i>Siate voi</i> , be ye.
	<i>Stano eglino</i> , let them be.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD (SOGGIUNTIVO).

PRESENT TENSE (PRESENTE).

Ch'io sia, that I may be.
Che tu sia, that thou mayst be.
Ch'egli sia, that he may be.

Che noi siamo, that we may be.
Che voi siate, that you may be.
Ch'eglino stiano, that they may be.

IMPERFECT TENSE (IMPERFETTO).

Se io fossi, if I were.
Se tu fossi, if thou wert.
S'egli fosse, if he were.

Se noi fossimo, if we were.
Se voi foste, if you were.
S'eglino fossero, if they were.

PAST TENSE (PASSATO).

Ch'io sia stato, that I may have been.
Che tu sia stato, that thou mayst have been.
Ch'egli sia stato, that he may have been.

Che noi siamo stati, that we may have been.
Che voi siate stati, that you may have been.
Ch'eglino stiano stati, that they may have been.

PLUPERFECT TENSE (PIÙ CHE PERFETTO).

Se io fossi stato, if I had been.
Se tu fossi stato, if thou hadst been.
S'egli fosse stato, if he had been.

Se noi fossimo stati, if we had been.
Se voi foste stati, if you had been.
S'eglino fossero stati, if they had been.

INFINITIVE MOOD (INFINITO).

PRESENT (PRESENTE).

Essere, to be.

PAST (PASSATO).

Essere stato, to have been.

GERUND (GERUNDIO).

PRESENT (PRESENTE).

Essendo, being.

PAST (PASSATO).

Essendo stato, having been.

PARTICIPLES (PARTICIPI).

PRESENT (PRESENTE).

PAST (PASSATO).

Essente, being.Sing., *stato* (m.), *stata* (f.) } been.
Plur., *stati* (m.), *state* (f.) }

The following are the most common idioms formed with the verb "to be":—

Essere tardi, to be late (of time).*essere in ritardo*, to be late (of a person).*essere all'ordine*, to be ready.*essere in grado di*, to be able.*essere a tempo*, to be in time.*essere fuori di sè*, to be mad or maddened.*essere sul punto di* } to be on the point of.
essere per }*essere in disaccordo*, to disagree.*essere d'accordo*, to agree.*essere a mal termine*, to be in a critical condition.*essere in buon concetto*, to have a good character.*essere in cattivo concetto*, to have a bad character.*essere in sè*, to be sane (right in mind).*essere a grado*, to please.

"Stare," to be.

INDICATIVE MOOD.

PRESENT TENSE.

Io sto, I am.*Tu stai*, thou art.*Egli sta*, he is.*Noi stiamo*, we are.*Voi state*, you are.*Eglino stanno*, they are.

IMPERFECT TENSE.

Io stavo, I was.*Tu stavi*, thou wast.*Egli stava*, he was.*Noi stavamo*, we were.*Voi stavate*, you were.*Eglino stavano*, they were.

PAST DEFINITE TENSE.

Io stetti, I was.*Tu stesti*, thou wast.*Egli stette*, he was.*Noi stemmo*, we were.*Voi steste*, you were.*Eglino stettero*, they were.

FUTURE TENSE.

Io starò, I shall be.*Tu starai*, thou wilt be.*Egli starà*, he will be.*Noi staremo*, we shall be.*Voi starete*, you will be.*Eglino staranno*, they will be.

All the Compound Tenses of *stare*, to which the Past Participle *stato* really belongs, are the same as those of the verb *essere*, given at pp. 23-25.

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

Sta (tu), be thou.*Stia (egli)*, let him be.*Stiamo (noi)*, let us be.*State (voi)*, be ye.*Stiano (eglino)*, let them be.

CONDITIONAL MOOD.

PRESENT TENSE.

Io starei, I should be.*Tu staresti*, thou wouldst be.*Egli starebbe*, he would be.*Noi staremmo*, we should be.*Voi stareste*, you would be.*Eglino starebbero*, they would be.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

PRESENT TENSE.

Ch'io stia, that I may be.*Ché tu stia*, that thou mayst be.*Ch'egli stia*, that he may be.*Che noi stiamo*, that we may be.*Che voi stiate*, that you may be.*Ch'eglino stiano*, that they may be.

IMPERFECT TENSE.

Se io stessi, if I were.*Se tu stessi*, if thou wert.*S'egli stesse*, if he were.*Se noi stessimo*, if we were.*Se voi steste*, if you were.*S'eglino stessero*, if they were.*

INFINITIVE MOOD.

Stare, to be.*Essere stato*, having been.

GERUND.

PRESENT.

Stando, being.

PAST.

Essendo stato, having been.

PARTICIPLES.

PRESENT.

Stante, being.

PAST.

	<i>Mas.</i>	<i>Fem.</i>
Sing.,	<i>stato</i>	<i>stata</i> ,
Plur.,	<i>stati</i>	<i>state</i> ,

} been.

1. The Past Participle with *essere* or *stare* must agree with the subject.

2. *Essere* is used when the state to which it refers is permanent: *mio fratello è alto*, my brother is tall. *Stare* is used when the state to which it refers is transitory: *mia sorella sta seduta*, my sister is seated; *Io sto scrivendo*, I am writing.

3. *Stare* never means "to stand" unless it is followed by the words *in piedi*: *noi stiamo in piedi*, we are standing. As a further proof of the fact that *stare* does not mean "to stand" may be mentioned the phrase: *sua zia sta a letto*, her aunt is in bed.

il fico, the fig.
il pesce, the fish.
la notte scorsa, last night.
la chiave, the key.
la carrozza, the carriage.
la processione, the procession.
Firenze, Florence.
la rivista, the review.
il ballo, the ball.
il palazzo, the palace.
il parco, the park.
la rappresentazione, the acting.
lo studio, the studio.
stamattina, this morning.
troppo, too much.
la lezione, the lesson.

ne, of him, of her, of it, of them.
il messaggio, the message.
l'avvocato, the lawyer.
l'ospedale, the hospital.
la sala, the drawing-room.
il museo, the museum.
la fragola, the strawberry.
la settimana prossima, next week.
il mese, the month.
il fiume, the river.
la passeggiata, the walk.
il pometo, the orchard (of apples).
egli viene, he comes.
raccolto, gathered.
fatto, done, made.
via, away.

ozioso, lazy.
mai, giammai, never.
tosto, soon.

recentemente, recently.
sovente, often.
perchè, why, because.
sempre, always.

XVII.

1. Come sta, signorina? Benissimo, grazie; e Lei? 2. Era ella al teatro la notte scorsa? 3. Eglino saranno a Roma domani. 4. Io sarò a casa quando lo zio viene. 5. Dov' era ella ieri? Ella era all' ospedale. 6. Dove sono le chiavi? Nella sala. 7. Ella è in carrozza. 8. Era egli a casa? No, signore; egli era al museo. 9. Elleno sono a Parigi colla zia. 10. Saremo noi a tempo pella processione? 11. Le fragole sono sulla tavola. 12. Io era nel prato oggi.

1. Where were you yesterday? 2. We were in London. 3. I shall be at home to-morrow. 4. We are with the aunt and uncle. 5. You will be in Rome soon. 6. Wast thou at the aunt's house? 7. I was at the uncle's house. 8. Where are they (*m.*)? 9. They were in Paris yesterday. 10. They will be in Florence next week. 11. He was at the brother's house. 12. She will be with the cousin (*f.*) to-day.

XVIII.

1. Noi siamo stati all' albergo stamattina. 2. Siete voi stati al teatro recentemente? 3. Noi eravamo stati al museo. 4. Voi sareste stati alla rivista oggi. 5. Egli è stato alla casa dello zio. 6. Elleno erano state alla bottega. 7. Dov' è il cappello? Esso sta sulla tavola. 8. L'uomo era stato al prato coi ragazzi. 9. Egli sarà stato qui tre mesi. 10. Ella è stata alla città di Roma. 11. Elleno sarebbero state alla chiesa, ma egli era troppo tardi. 12. I fratelli di Maria sono stati qui.

1. He has been to the ball with the soldier's brother. 2. She will have been at the church. 3. We should be at the market to-day. 4. We had been at Rome. 5. You would have been at the theatre. 6. Shall we be at the theatre to-

morro? 7. Yes, at the King's Theatre. 8. Hast thou been at the sister's house? 9. No, but I have often been in the cousin's (*f.*) house. 10. The brother had been to the river with the dogs. 11. Have the three dogs been with Charles? 12. Two dogs have been with Charles to-day.

XIX.

1. Saremo noi al palazzo domani. 2. Foste voi a tempo pel ballo alla casa della zia. 3. Siete voi stato a Firenze? No, io sono stato al Cairo. 4. Io sono stato al parco. 5. Voi avete ragione, egli è stato a Parigi, e non a Milano. 6. Ha la serva avuto il butirro? No, ma ella ha avuto il pane. 7. Noi siamo stati al mercato; ecco pere, mele, ed uve. 8. Voi sarete a Londra la settimana prossima. 9. Perchè è ella stata al bosco? Uno dei cani era là. 10. Io sono stata col padre alla rivista. 11. Sia il servo alla ferrovia oggi. 12. La zia era stata nella campagna.

1. Let them be at the railway to-day. 2. They (*f.*) have been at the church to-day and yesterday. 3. When shall you be in the duke's park? 4. I have not seen the brother's watch. 5. Have you been in Italy? 6. I have been in Italy often. 7. What cities have you seen? 8. I have been in Rome, Florence, Naples, and Milan. 9. She is going to France. She will be in Paris next week. 10. If I had been in Paris, would you have been there too? 11. Be in time for dinner, John. 12. They would have been in Rome if we had not been there.

XX.

1. Dov' è stata la ragazza? 2. Ella è stata col fratello nel bosco, eglino hanno raccolto dei fiori. 3. Io sono all' ordine pella passeggiata. 4. Egli è in ritardo? È egli nel giardino? 5. Io sarò colle cugine domani. 6. Io avrei avuto la focaccia, ma non era alla casa a tempo. 7. Egli è ora col padre nel pometo. 8. Perchè non era ella stata qui? 9. Ella era alla chiesa ma non alla ferrovia. 10. È il dottore stato qui? Sì, signore. 11. Noi non saremo a tempo pella rappresentazione. 12. Ha ella avuto la lezione? No, signore.

1. Where have you been? 2. I should have been at the church if Mary had not been here. 3. Would you have been at the station if you had had time? 4. I should have gone to the wood. 5. Has Charles been to the painter's studio? 6. No; he is now with the uncle and two cousins (*m.*). 7. Where will you be to-morrow? 8. Here, sir, with the brother and sister. 9. I shall be ready when he comes. 10. She has not been to the theatre yet. 11. Let him be ready in time. 12. Why is he not here?

XXI.

1. La serva era un poco di buono, ella va via. 2. Siete voi all'ordine, Maria? No, io non sono all'ordine. 3. Il pittore è fuori di sè. 4. Io sono sempre a tempo. 5. Quando ritornerai dall'Inghilterra? 6. Ella era sul punto di andare al parco. 7. Voi avete ragione, noi non saremo in disaccordo. 8. Il ragazzo è a mal termine. 9. Il padre ha un figlio, ma egli è un poco di buono. 10. È egli d'accordo con la madre? Sì, signore. 11. Voi state per fare una passeggiata. 12. L'allievo è in buon concetto col maestro.

1. John is lazy; he is never in time. 2. If you are not ready to go now we shall be late for church. 3. Has the servant (*m.*) a good character? 4. No, he has a bad character. 5. You were in a critical position yesterday. 6. She always agrees with Beatrice, but disagrees with John. 7. They are certainly mad. 8. No, they are sane. 9. When will you be able to go to the sister's house? 10. I was on the point of going to the sister's house yesterday. 11. Does the dog please the lady? Yes. 12. I am on the point of disagreeing with the doctor.

THE ADJECTIVE.

1. In the singular adjectives ending in *a* are feminine.

"	"	"	<i>e</i>	"	<i>m.</i> and <i>f.</i>
"	"	"	<i>i</i>	"	<i>m.</i> and <i>f.</i>
"	"	"	<i>o</i>	"	<i>masculine.</i>

There are no adjectives ending in *u*.

2. All adjectives form the plural by changing the final vowel into *i*—*verde, verdi; caro, cari*; but if the singular ends in *a* (and adjectives ending in *a* are all feminine) the plural is formed by changing the final *a* into *e*—*bella, belle*.

DEGREES OF COMPARISON.

1. The comparative is expressed by *più* (more) or *meno* (less): *alto* (tall), *più alto* (taller); *generoso* (generous), *meno generoso* (less generous).

2. The superlative absolute is formed by adding the termination *issimo* to the positive form of the adjective deprived of its final vowel—*forte, fortissimo*.

3. The superlative relative is formed by pre-fixing in the masculine *il più* or *il meno*, and in the feminine *la più* or *la meno* to the positive form of the adjective: *il più cortese, il meno povero, la più gentile, la meno superba*.

4. The following adjectives form their degrees of comparison irregularly:

<i>buono</i> , good.	<i>migliore</i> , better.	<i>il migliore</i> , the best.
		<i>ottimo</i> , very good.
<i>cattivo</i> , bad.	<i>peggiore</i> , worse.	<i>il peggiore</i> , the worst.
		<i>pessimo</i> , very bad.

5. The following adjectives form their degrees of comparison both regularly and irregularly:

<i>grande</i> , great.	<i>maggiore</i> , greater.	<i>il maggiore</i> , the greatest.
		<i>massimo</i> , very great.
<i>piccolo</i> , little.	<i>minore</i> , lesser.	<i>il minore</i> , the least.
		<i>minimo</i> , very small.
<i>alto</i> , high.	<i>superiore</i> , higher.	<i>il superiore</i> ,
		<i>sommo</i> ,
		<i>supremo</i> ,
		} the highest.
<i>basso</i> , low.	<i>inferiore</i> , lower.	<i>l'inferiore</i> , the lowest.
		<i>infimo</i> , very low.

6. The superlative absolute may be also formed by repeating twice the positive: *alto alto*, very high.

7. "Than" is rendered by *di* and sometimes by *che*.

8. When adjectives end in *ro* or *re* preceded by a consonant, their superlative absolute is formed by dropping the termination *ro* or *re* and adding *érrimo*: *celebre*, *celebérrimo*.

MODIFICATIONS OF WORDS.

1. Nouns, adjectives, verbs, and adverbs, that is to say more than nine-tenths of all the words in the Italian language, may be modified. This peculiarity contributes not a little to its beauty, and increases to an enormous extent its vocabulary. By such modifications additional qualifications are added to the original meaning of a word.

2. Many and various are the terminations used for these modifications, and none of them may be used indiscriminately. This fact presents a real difficulty to the student, who should avoid the use of those modifications with which he is not already acquainted. (See No. 7, next page.)

3. Modified words are divided into distinct classes according to the particular meaning of each modification they have undergone.

4. ONE is a modification that increases the original meaning of a word: *il libro*, the book; *il librone*, the large book. This modification has the peculiarity of changing into the masculine gender words that are feminine: *la porta*, the door; *il portone*, the large door, the front door. OTTO adds power or strength: *il giovine*, the young man; *il giovanotto*, the strong young man.

ACCIO, AGLIA, ASTRO, AZZO denote not only increase, but add also an idea of badness: *la casa*, the house; *la casaccia*, the large and dilapidated house.

ELLO, ERELLO, ETTO denote diminution: *il vecchio*, the old man; *il vecchietto*, *il vecchierello*, the little old man.

INO conveys not only an idea of diminution, but also one of fondness: *cara*, dear; *carina*, darling.

UOLO, UCCIO, ICCIO, ÓGNOLO, etc., add the idea of worthlessness to that of diminution: *il libro*, the book; *il libruccio*, the worthless little book, etc.

5. As verbs are conjugated by modifying their termination, the modifications of which we are speaking can only take place in their root: *cantare*, to sing; *cantarellare*, to hum; *canticchiare*, to hum out of tune; *piovere*, to rain; *piovigginare*, to drizzle.

6. Some words already modified may undergo a second modification: *il libro*, the book; *il libretto*, the small book; *il librettino*, the nice little book.

7. There is a large number of the different modifications, of which we have given above only the most common, and not all modifications can be used with every word. The foreign student, instead of modifying a word, should use one or more adjectives—"the nice little dog," *il bello piccolo cane*, which is correct, although not so idiomatic as *cagnolino*.

la rosa, the rose.
il nastro, the ribbon.
la donna, the woman.
Latino, Latin.
Italiano, Italian.
lungo, long.
famoso, famous.
vecchio, old.
infelice, unhappy.
ammalato, ill.
bello, beautiful, pretty.
rosso, red.
nero, black.
vezzoso, charming.
antico, ancient.

il canale, the canal.
l'albero, the tree.
l'autrice, the authoress.
il latte, the milk.
la lingua, the language.
grande, tall, large.
piccolo, little.
buono, good.
felice, happy.
caro, dear.
bianco, white.
nuovo, new.
turchino, blue.
fresco, fresh.
sindaco, mayor.

XXII.

1. Il cugino sarà qui oggi. 2. La grande tavola non è qui, è nella sala. 3. Avete voi veduto il lungo canale? Non ancora, signore. 4. È la bottiglia di vino nella canestra? Sì, ed i bicchierini anche. 5. La figlia del famoso pittore è bella. 6. Ha egli buon vino? Sì, egli ha del vino vecchio. 7. È la ragazza felice? No, ella è infelice. 8. La cara amica della zia è ammalata. 9. Il fratello e la sorella sono buoni.

10. Gli alti alberi nel parco del sindaco sono belli. 11. Avete delle rose bianche? No, ma ho delle rose rosse. 12. La nuova carrozza è nera.

1. Where is the tall cousin's pretty sister? 2. Are they the daughters of the good painter? 3. No, they are the daughters of the handsome brother. 4. Where is the little basket? 5. It is on the small table in the room. 6. Where is the black hat with the blue ribbon? 7. The authoress is not beautiful, but she is a charming woman. 8. The old painter has given a picture to the doctor. 9. Where are the glasses and the fresh milk? 10. Latin was the language spoken in Italy in olden times. 11. The little rose was given to the girl. 12. Where is the bad wine? It is not here; we have some good wine.

la moglie, the wife.

il mondo, the world.

crudele, cruel.

acre, sour.

onesto, honest.

così . . . che, so . . . as.

il pavimento, the pavement.

l'autore, the author.

forte, strong.

secco, dry.

benévolo, benevolent.

próssimo, nearest.

largo, wide.

vescovo, bishop.

XXIII.

1. Il figlio è più forte del padre. 2. La casa del negoziante è più grande della casa del dottore. 3. Il re è meno crudele del generale. 4. La madre è più vezzosa che la figlia. 5. Siamo stati al migliore albergo di Roma. 6. Il pavimento è meno secco della strada. 7. Un generale grandissimo va alla guerra in Cina. 8. Le mele nel giardino sono acerrime. 9. Avete veduto il più alto albero nel bosco? 10. La moglie del vescovo è benévolentissima, ed è anche la più bella donna a Firenze. 11. Giovanni è il minore dei fratelli. 12. Londra è la più grande ed anche la più bella città dell' Inghilterra.

1. Charles's dog is larger than John's dog. 2. Yes; but John's dog is handsomer than Charles's dog. 3. You had better wine than you have now. 4. I am not so strong as my cousin (*m.*). 5. The wine is very sour. 6. Yes, and the bottle is very large. 7. The painter is as honest as the author. 8. The painter and the doctor are very honest. 9. The garden is less

dry than the street. 10. Where is the nearest railway? 11. At the end of the long street. 12. The room is longer than it is wide.

il cagnolino, the dear little dog.

il librettino, the nice little book.

il giovinastro, the bad young man.

il medicastro, the quack.

la navicella, the little ship.

la casaccia, the large dilapidated house.

il vecchierello, the dear little old man.

la bastonata, the blow with a stick.

il fratellino, the little brother.

carino, darling.

il vinaccio, the bad wine.

il tavolino, the little table.

il médico, the doctor.

il compagno, the companion.

la duchessa, the duchess.

nasuto, with a long nose.

cieco, blind.

riccone, very or enormously rich.

l'elefante, the elephant.

il cammello, the camel.

la tigre, the tiger.

l'animale, the animal.

il leone, the lion.

il vecchione, the very old man.

XXIV.

1. Avete il cane del cugino qui? No, ma ho il cagnolino della zia. 2. Il libro del maestro è sulla tavola, ma il librettino non è qui. 3. Giovanni è un giovinastro, ha cattivi compagni. 4. E il medico un medicastro? No, signore. 5. Avete veduto la navicella? 6. Avete visto la casa del negoziante? Sì, è la casaccia nel bosco. 7. Il vecchierello è nel giardino. 8. Aveva un bastone e ha dato al cane una bastonata. 9. La duchessa è la più bella donna a Londra. 10. Avete il libro? Sì, ma è un libruccio. 11. Avete veduto l'uomo nasuto? 12. Il leone è fortissimo.

1. The dear little old man is blind. 2. The little brother is a darling. 3. The uncle's dog is worse than it was last year. 4. Paul is a strong young man. 5. The man with the long nose is very cruel to the horse. 6. Is the very old man very rich? 7. Have you some wine? Yes, it is the merchant's good wine. 8. The girl's dear little dog is in the garden. 9. The elephant is stronger than the horse or the camel. 10. The tiger is more cruel than any other animal. 11. But it is less strong than the lion. 12. The nice little book is on the little table.

„ Possessive Adjectives.

Masc.		Fem.		
Sing.	Plur.	Sing.	Plur.	
<i>il mio</i>	<i>i miei</i>	<i>la mia</i>	<i>le mie</i>	my
<i>il tuo</i>	<i>i tuoi</i>	<i>la tua</i>	<i>le tue</i>	thy
<i>il suo</i>	<i>i suoi</i>	<i>la sua</i>	<i>le sue</i>	his, her, its
<i>il nostro</i>	<i>i nostri</i>	<i>la nostra</i>	<i>le nostre</i>	our
<i>il vostro</i>	<i>i vostri</i>	<i>la vostra</i>	<i>le vostre</i>	your
<i>il loro</i>	<i>i loro</i>	<i>la loro</i>	<i>le loro</i>	their

1. All possessive adjectives are used with the article.
2. When preceding nouns signifying relationship no article is used in the singular: *mia madre, tuo padre*.
3. When there is another adjective, besides the possessive, the article must be used: *la mia bella sorella*.
4. When preceding titles no article is used in the singular: *vostra Altezza*, your Highness.
5. *Loro* is always used with the article.

i genitori, the parents.

la stanza da mangiare, the dining-room.

gentile, kind.

lo scaffale, the bookshelf.

il vecchio, the old man.

severo, severe.

XXV.

1. Mio fratello viene oggi da Parigi. 2. La loro madre è ammalata, ha avuto il dottore. 3. Il mio caro padre è nel giardino con mio fratello. 4. Vostra sorella ha avuto un libro da mio padre. 5. La mia bella figlia è nella campagna. 6. Il loro maestro è severo, ed ha ragione perchè i ragazzi sono sovente cattivi. 7. I figli amano i loro genitori. 8. Le vostre sorelle sono alla ferrovia col loro zio. 9. L'uomo è nel mio giardino. 10. Il suo cappello non è sulla tavola. 11. Carlo ha visto sua sorella a Londra. 12. La vostra serva non è stata qui.

1. Her mother is very beautiful. 2. His dog is small but strong. 3. Your hat is not here, sir. 4. Your parents will be here to-morrow. 5. My brother is very happy to-day. 6. Our dear sisters are not in Rome. 7. Their children were in Florence yesterday. 8. Their books were on the shelf in the dining-room. 9. I have given Mary and her brothers some cherries. 10. Charles and my little brother are in my uncle's room. 11. They have their dogs and cats there. 12. My uncle is a very kind old gentleman.

Demonstrative Adjectives.

<i>Masc.</i>		<i>Fem.</i>	
Sing.	Plur.	Sing.	Plur.
<i>questo</i> , this.	<i>questi</i> .	<i>questa</i> .	<i>queste</i> .
<i>cotesto</i> , that.	<i>cotesti</i> .	<i>cotesta</i> .	<i>coteste</i> .
<i>quello</i> , that.	<i>quelli</i> .	<i>quella</i> .	<i>quelle</i> .

The difference between *cotesto* (that) and *quello* (that) is that the former indicates an object near the person addressed, and *quello* an object removed from both the speaker and the person addressed.

Numeral Adjectives.

The Cardinal Numbers are:—

1 uno, una.	18 diciotto.
2 due.	19 diciannove.
3 tre.	20 venti.
4 quattro.	21 ventuno.
5 cinque.	22 ventidue.
6 sei.	23 ventitrè.
7 sette.	24 ventiquattro.
8 otto.	25 venticinque.
9 nove.	26 ventisei.
10 dieci.	27 ventisette.
11 undici.	28 ventotto.
12 dodici.	29 ventinove.
13 tredici.	30 trenta.
14 quattordici.	31 trentuno.
15 quindici.	32 trentadue.
16 sedici.	33 trentatrè.
17 diciassette.	34 trentaquattro.

35 trentacinque.	81 ottantuno.
36 trentasei.	90 novanta.
37 trentasette.	91 novantuno.
38 trentotto.	100 cento.
39 trentanove.	101 cento ed uno.
40 quaranta.	110 cento dieci.
41 quarantuno.	200 duecento.
50 cinquanta.	300 trecento.
51 cinquantuno.	1000 mille.
60 sessanta.	2000 due mila.
61 sessantuno.	3000 tre mila.
70 settanta.	10,000 diecimila.
71 settantuno.	100,000 centomila.
80 ottanta.	1,000,000 un milione.
	2,000,000 due milioni, etc.

The Ordinal Numbers are:—

1st primo.	18th diciottésimo, <i>or</i> dici-
2nd secondo.	mottavo.
3rd terzo.	19th diciannovésimo, <i>or</i>
4th quarto.	decimonono.
5th quinto.	20th ventésimo.
6th sesto.	21st ventésimo primo, <i>or</i>
7th sétimo.	ventunésimo.
8th ottavo.	30th trentésimo.
9th nono.	31st trentunésimo.
10th décimo.	40th quarantésimo.
11th undécimo, <i>or</i> décimo primo.	50th cinquantésimo.
12th duodécimo, <i>or</i> décimo se-	100th centésimo.
condo.	101st centésimo primo.
13th tredicésimo, <i>or</i> décimo ter-	200th duecentésimo.
zo.	300th trecentésimo.
14th quattordicésimo, <i>or</i> décimo	400th quattrocenésimo.
quarto.	500th cinquentésimo.
15th quindicésimo, <i>or</i> décimo	1000th millésimo.
quinto.	10,000th diecimillésimo.
16th sedicésimo, <i>or</i> décimo sesto.	100,000th centomillésimo.
17th diciassetésimo, <i>or</i> décimo	1,000,000th milionésimo, etc.
sétimo.	último <i>the last</i> .

1. With names of kings the Ordinal Number is used: *Eduardo Sétimo*.

2. In dates the Cardinal Numbers are used: *Il nove Ottobre*; except for the first of the month: *il primo Novembre*.

3. By prefixing the feminine article to the Cardinal Number the hours of the day are signified: *le due*, two o'clock.

Indefinite Adjective.

1. It is most important to remember that *ogni*, each; *qualche*, some; *qualunque*, every, are only used in the singular number, although they may be used to convey a plural idea: *Qualche amico è nella camera prossima* may mean—

(A) Some friends are in the next room.

(B) A certain friend is in the next room.

To avoid all doubt in the above case, some other indefinite adjective should be used :

(A) *Alcuni amici sono nella camera prossima.*

(B) *Un certo amico è nella camera prossima.*

ambo, both.

pochi, few.

alquanti, some.

parecchi, several.

molti, many.

il premio, the prize.

l'incendio, the fire (conflagration).

in capo di, at the end of.

la libreria, the library.

finora, until now.

nessuno, niuno, nullo, veruno, no one.

alcuno, some.

tale, cotale, such.

ciascuno, each one.

il magazzino, the warehouse.

la contrada, the street.

la coperta, the rug.

così, sì, so.

la pittura, the picture.

XXVI.

1. Cotesta ragazza ha avuto un premio. 2. Questo cappello è bellissimo, ma cotesto cappello non è sì bello. 3. Dov' è il gatto? È su quel muro. 4. Dov' è l'incendio? A quel magazzino in capo di questa contrada. 5. Quest' uomo è stato ammalato. 6. Coteste case sono alte. 7. Questo ragazzo ha avuto del danaro da suo zio. 8. Mio fratello ha freddo, desidera questa coperta. 9. L'allieva ha fatto quella lezione, che era difficilissima. 10. Questa sedia è più alta di quella sedia. 11. Quei libri sono sulla tavola nella libreria. 12. Quel ragazzo ha avuto un premio.

1. That book (near you) is very good. 2. I have never seen this book until now. 3. My brother is older than the lawyer. 4. Where are those ladies who were here this morning? 5. They are at the theatre. 6. That theatre is very beautiful. 7. The theatre at Milan is more beautiful. 8. Are those pictures (near you) very old? 9. No, they are new. 10. My friend the painter has given my mother three pictures. 11. Those bottles are too small. 12. I have these three glasses only.

il granaio, the barn.

superbo, proud.

vicino a, near.

quale, which.

andato, gone.

il giardiniere, the gardener.

l'attore, the actor.

XXVII.

1. Qual bicchiere di vino avrete? 2. Che belle pitture! Chi è il pittore? 3. Quale città è sulle rive di quel fiume? 4. In quale parco siete stato? 5. Dove sono le chiavi? Quali chiavi? Le chiavi del granaio. 6. A quale museo è andato? 7. Che bei fiori in questo giardino! Sì, il giardiniere è superbo dei fiori. 8. Che bella ragazza è la vostra amica? 9. Con quali amici è stato? 10. Su quale tavola è il vostro libro? Sulla tavola vicino alla finestra. 11. Quali regali avete là? 12. Quale orologio è quello di vostra madre?

1. What church is that? 2. It is the Church of St. Mary the Greater. 3. What a beautiful church it is! 4. Where are my baskets of cherries? 5. What baskets? My white baskets. 6. They were in my sister's little room on the table. 7. Which friends were you with this morning? 8. With those friends (yonder). 9. What a tall man your friend is! 10. He is not so tall as his brother the actor. 11. Which houses are the merchant's? 12. The three red houses with black roofs.

l'arancia, the orange.

l'anno, the year.

la libreria, the library.

l'album, the album.

l'està, summer.

una volta, once.

due volte, twice, etc.

la trappola, the trap.

la via, the way.
fa, ago.
Petà, the age.
quanti, how many?

il francobollo, the postage-stamp.
il capitano, the captain.
l'esposizione, the exhibition.
sémplice, silly.

XXVIII.

1. Maria ha sei mele, e due arance nella canestra. 2. Che età ha vostra sorella? Ella ha ventotto anni. 3. Tre settimane fa mio padre é stato a Roma. 4. Sono stata al teatro tre volte questa settimana. 5. Il re ha duecento soldati al palazzo. 6. Sette sorci erano nella trappola stamattina. 7. Due mila setanta libri sono in questa libreria. 8. Egli ha due mila cento dieci francobolli nel suo album. 9. Il capitano ha cento uomini nella compagnia. 10. Ho quatiro sorelle, la più giovine ha cinque anni. 11. Ho veduto il vostro giardino tre anni fa. 12. Siete stato all' esposizione l'anno passato? No, vi sono stato due anni fa.

1. How many books have you there? 2. I have twenty-five books and three hundred sheets of paper. 3. Are you older than your brother? 4. My brother is fourteen and I am twelve. 5. Fifteen hundred soldiers were here to-day. 6. They are now on the way to Rome. 7. Three thousand soldiers were here five years ago. 8. Where are your twenty-one books, John? 9. My new books are in my room. 10. How many dogs has Charles's father? 11. He had forty dogs a year ago. 12. He is my best friend.

NAMES OF THE DAYS OF THE WEEK.

Doménica, Sunday.
Lunedì, Monday.
Martedì, Tuesday.
Mercoledì, Wednesday.

Giovedì, Thursday.
Venerdì, Friday.
Sábato, Saturday.

NAMES OF THE MONTHS.

Gennaio, January.
Febbraio, February.
Marzo, March.
Aprile, April.
Maggio, May.
Giugno, June.

Luglio, July.
Agosto, August.
Settembre, September.
Ottobre, October.
Novembre, November.
Dicembre, December.

la stagione, the season.
l'anniversario, the anniversary.
l'inverno, the winter.
Umberto, Humbert.
generalmente, generally.
breve, short.
giusto, just.
morì, died.
Io nacqui, I was born.
ci è, c'è, there is.

la data, the date.
la primavera, the spring.
la morte, the death.
il contemporaneo, the contemporary.
mezzo, half.
dolce, pleasant, sweet.
a casa, at home.
nacque, he, she was born.
ci sono, there are.

XXIX.

1. Che ora è? Sono le cinque; nostra cugina sarà qui alle cinque e mezzo. 2. Quale è la data? È il tre di Giugno. 3. Eduardo Settimo è il re d'Inghilterra. 4. Mio zio morì il quattro Ottobre mille novecentotré. 5. Maggio e Giugno sono generalmente dolcissimi mesi. 6. Ci sono quattro stagioni; delle quali la primavera è la migliore. 7. Mia sorella nacque il venti Aprile mille ottocento novantotto. 8. Domani sarà il primo Agosto; sarà l'anniversario della morte di mia madre. 9. Il Venerdì prossimo mio fratello sarà a Londra. 10. L'inverno è qui, vi è stata una gran caduta di neve. 11. A che ora è andata vostra sorella al ballo? Alle nove meno un quarto. 12. Giorgio Terzo d'Inghilterra e Luigi Sedicesimo di Francia furono contemporanei.

1. Who is the King of Italy? Victor Emanuel III. 2. Where were you at half-past ten this morning? I was with my cousin (f.) in the garden. 3. February is the shortest month of the year. 4. To-morrow will be the 9th of May. 5. I shall be at home on Sunday. 6. John will be in London from Friday to Monday. 7. Edward I. was a very just king. 8. How old are you, Mary? 9. I was born on the last day of May, 1895. 10. Your garden is not so pretty as the doctor's. 11. I shall be with you at half-past four. 12. My sister was born in June; I will be ten years old in January.

il mulino, the mill,
la folla, the crowd.
la persona, the person.
la vacca, the cow.

la famiglia, the family.
nulla, nothing.
la storia, the story.
tutto, all.

certo, some (a certain).
ambedue } both *m.* and *f.*
ambo }
vero, true.
la battaglia, the battle.
l'azione, the deed.

qualche, some.
alcuno, some, few.
tale, such a.
ognuno, every one.
ferito, wounded.
quieto, quiet.

morto, dead.

XXX.

1. Tutti gli uomini sono al mulino. 2. Ogni ragazzo ha avuto un regalo. 3. Molti soldati furono feriti nella battaglia. 4. Parecchie donne erano nella folla. 5. Ella ha qualche amica nel giardino. 6. Ci sono alcune mele nella canestra. 7. Ha poche uve pel ragazzo. 8. Abbiamo qualche libro? Noi non abbiamo nulla. 9. Tutte le case sono piccole. 10. Egli ha un certo amico nella camera. 11. Tale azione è cattiva. 12. Noi abbiamo parecchie cugine.

1. Several persons have seen your little sister to-day. 2. The whole family loves my dear little sister. 3. A few cows were in the meadow this morning. 4. All the flowers are dead now. 5. Every one is afraid. 6. All these persons are afraid of the big dog. 7. The dog is very quiet. 8. All the children are at school. 9. They will be in the garden this afternoon at four o'clock. 10. There are several rich old men in this town. 11. Both my brother and yours are at the theatre. 12. Such a story is not true.

THE VERB.

1. The Regular Verbs of the Italian language are classed into three conjugations, distinguished by the termination of the infinitive in *are, ere, ire*.

2. The order of the conjugations is the same as the alphabetical order of the vowels *a, e, i*.

- cantare*, to sing 1st conjugation—the first letter of the termination is the first vowel (*a*).
vendere, to sell ... 2nd conjugation—the first letter of the termination is the second vowel (*e*).
dormire, to sleep ... 3rd conjugation—the first letter of the termination is the third vowel (*i*).

These "leading vowels" reappear very frequently throughout the conjugation of each verb.

3. In conjugating a regular verb the termination (*are*, *ere*, or *ire*) is dropped and replaced by new terminations. The root of the verb—*i.e.*, all that is left of the infinitive form deprived of its termination—is invariable and is present throughout the conjugation. Thus, in the verb *cantare* the letters *cant* are its root, and the letters *are* its termination.

4. In the three conjugations of the regular verbs as given below the terminations that are similar to others already given are omitted.

5. As stated before, the Personal Pronouns being generally omitted in Italian, they are not given in the following conjugations. The student can find them at pp. 16-27, as given with the auxiliary verbs.

6. In the conjugations of the regular verbs as given here the terminations of the second conjugation are the same as those of the first whenever indicated by a dash. In the same way, the terminations of the third conjugation are the same as those of the second when similarly indicated by a dash.

INFINITIVE.

I.	II.	III.
<i>Cantare</i> , to sing.	<i>Vendere</i> , to sell.	<i>Dormire</i> , to sleep.

INDICATIVE MOOD.

PRESENT TENSE.

<i>cant-o</i>		<i>vend—</i>		<i>dorm—</i>	
<i>cant-i</i>		<i>vend—</i>		<i>dorm—</i>	
<i>cant-a</i>		<i>vend-e</i>		<i>dorm—</i>	
<i>cant-iamo</i>		<i>vend—</i>		<i>dorm—</i>	
<i>cant-ate</i>		<i>vend-ete</i>		<i>dorm-ite</i>	
<i>cant-ano</i>		<i>vend-ono</i>		<i>dorm—</i>	
	I sing, etc.		I sell, etc.		I sleep, etc.

IMPERFECT TENSE.

<i>cant-ava</i>	I sang, etc.	<i>vend-eva</i>	I sold, etc.	<i>dorm-iva</i>	I slept, etc.
<i>cant-avi</i>		<i>vend-evi</i>		<i>dorm-ivi</i>	
<i>cant-ava</i>		<i>vend-eva</i>		<i>dorm-iva</i>	
<i>cant-avamo</i>		<i>vend-evamo</i>		<i>dorm-ivamo</i>	
<i>cant-avate</i>		<i>vend-evate</i>		<i>dorm-ivate</i>	
<i>cant-avano</i>		<i>vend-evano</i>		<i>dorm-ivano</i>	

PAST DEFINITE TENSE.

<i>cant-ai</i>	I sang, etc.	<i>vend-ci</i>	I sold, etc.	<i>dorm-ii</i>	I slept, etc.
<i>cant-asti</i>		<i>vend-esti</i>		<i>dorm-isti</i>	
<i>cant-ò</i>		<i>vend-è</i>		<i>dorm-ì</i>	
<i>cant-ammo</i>		<i>vend-emmo</i>		<i>dorm-immo</i>	
<i>cant-aste</i>		<i>vend-este</i>		<i>dorm-iste</i>	
<i>cant-arono</i>		<i>vend-arono</i>		<i>dorm-irono</i>	

The Third Person singular of the Past Definite is always written with the Italian accent when formed regularly.

FUTURE TENSE.

<i>cant-erò</i>	I shall sing, etc.	<i>vend—</i>	I shall sell, etc.	<i>dorm-irò</i>	I shall sleep etc.
<i>cant-erai</i>		<i>vend—</i>		<i>dorm-irai</i>	
<i>cant-erà</i>		<i>vend—</i>		<i>dorm-irà</i>	
<i>cant-eremo</i>		<i>vend—</i>		<i>dorm-iremo</i>	
<i>cant-erete</i>		<i>vend—</i>		<i>dorm-irete</i>	
<i>cant-eranno</i>		<i>vend—</i>		<i>dorm-iranno</i>	

COMPOUND TENSES.

PAST INDEFINITE TENSE.

<i>ho</i>	<i>cantato.</i>	<i>ho</i>	<i>venduto.</i>	<i>ho</i>	<i>dormito.</i>
<i>hai</i>		<i>hai</i>		<i>hai</i>	
<i>ha</i>		<i>ha</i>		<i>ha</i>	
<i>abbiamo</i>		<i>abbiamo</i>		<i>abbiamo</i>	
<i>avete</i>		<i>avete</i>		<i>avete</i>	
<i>hanno</i>		<i>hanno</i>		<i>hanno</i>	
	have sung, etc.		have sold, etc.		have slept, etc.

PLUPERFECT TENSE.

<i>aveva</i> <i>avevi</i> <i>aveva</i> <i>avevamo</i> <i>avevate</i> <i>avevano</i>	<i>cantato.</i> I had sung, etc.	<i>aveva</i> <i>avevi</i> <i>aveva</i> <i>avevamo</i> <i>avevate</i> <i>avevano</i>	<i>venduto.</i> I had sold, etc.	<i>aveva</i> <i>avevi</i> <i>aveva</i> <i>avevamo</i> <i>avevate</i> <i>avevano</i>	<i>dormito.</i> I had slept, etc.
--	-------------------------------------	--	-------------------------------------	--	--------------------------------------

PAST ANTERIOR TENSE.

<i>ebbi</i> <i>avesti</i> <i>ebbe</i> <i>avemmo</i> <i>aveste</i> <i>ebbero</i>	<i>cantato.</i> I had sung, etc.	<i>ebbi</i> <i>avesti</i> <i>ebbe</i> <i>avemmo</i> <i>aveste</i> <i>ebbero</i>	<i>venduto.</i> I had sold, etc.	<i>ebbi</i> <i>avesti</i> <i>ebbe</i> <i>avemmo</i> <i>aveste</i> <i>ebbero</i>	<i>dormito.</i> I had slept, etc.
--	-------------------------------------	--	-------------------------------------	--	--------------------------------------

FUTURE ANTERIOR TENSE.

<i>avrò</i> <i>avrà</i> <i>avrà</i> <i>avremo</i> <i>avrete</i> <i>avranno</i>	<i>cantato.</i> I shall have sung, etc.	<i>avrò</i> <i>avrà</i> <i>avrà</i> <i>avremo</i> <i>avrete</i> <i>avranno</i>	<i>venduto.</i> I shall have sold, etc.	<i>avrò</i> <i>avrà</i> <i>avrà</i> <i>avremo</i> <i>avrete</i> <i>avranno</i>	<i>dormito.</i> I shall have slept, etc.
---	--	---	--	---	---

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

<i>cant-a</i> <i>cant-i</i> <i>cant-iamo</i> <i>cant-ate</i> <i>cánt-ino</i>	Sing thou, etc.	<i>vend-i</i> <i>vend-a</i> <i>vend-</i> <i>vend-ete</i> <i>vénd-ano</i>	Sell thou, etc.	<i>dorm-</i> <i>dorm-</i> <i>dorm-</i> <i>dorm-ite</i> <i>dorm-</i>	Sleep thou, etc.
--	-----------------	--	-----------------	---	------------------

CONDITIONAL MOOD.

PRESENT TENSE.

<i>cant-erei</i> <i>cant-eresti</i> <i>cant-erebbe</i> <i>cant-eremmo</i> <i>cant-ereste</i> <i>cant-erébbero</i>	I should sing, etc.	<i>vend-</i> <i>vend-</i> <i>vend-</i> <i>vend-</i> <i>vend-</i> <i>vend-</i>	I should sell, etc.	<i>dorm-irei</i> <i>dorm-iresti</i> <i>dorm-irebbe</i> <i>dorm-iremmo</i> <i>dorm-ireste</i> <i>dorm-irébbero</i>	I should sleep, etc.
--	---------------------	--	---------------------	--	----------------------

PAST TENSE.

*avrei
avresti
avrebbe
avremmo
avreste
avrebbero*

cantato.

I should have
sung, etc.

*avrei
avresti
avrebbe
avremmo
avreste
avrebbero*

venduto.

I should have
sold, etc.

*avrei
avresti
avrebbe
avremmo
avreste
avrebbero*

dormito.

I should have
slept, etc.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

PRESENT TENSE.

*che cant-i
che cant-i
che cant-i
che cant-iamo
che cant-iate
che cant-ino*

That I may
sing, etc.

*che vend-a
che vend-a
che vend-a
che vend—
che vend—
che vend-ano*

That I may
sell, etc.

*che dorm—
che dorm—
che dorm—
che dorm—
che dorm—
che dorm—*

That I may
sleep, etc.

IMPERFECT TENSE.

*se cant-assi
se cant-assi
se cant-asse
se cant-issimo
se cant-aste
se cant-essero*

If I sang,
etc.

*se vend-essi
se vend-essi
se vend-esse
se vend-issimo
se vend-este
se vend-essero*

If I sold,
etc.

*se dorm-issi
se dorm-issi
se dorm-isse
se dorm-issimo
se dorm-iste
se dorm-issero*

If I slept,
etc.

PAST TENSE.

*ch'abbia
ch'abbia
ch'abbia
ch'abbiamo
ch'abbiate
ch'abbiano*

cantato.

That I may
have sung, etc.

*ch'abbia
ch'abbia
ch'abbia
ch'abbiamo
ch'abbiate
ch'abbiano*

venduto.

That I may
have sold, etc.

*ch'abbia
ch'abbia
ch'abbia
ch'abbiamo
ch'abbiate
ch'abbiano*

dormito.

That I may
have slept, etc.

PLUPERFECT TENSE.

*se avessi
se avessi
se avesse
se avessimo
se avesse
se avessero*

cantato.

If I had
sung, etc.

*se avessi
se avessi
se avesse
se avessimo
se avesse
se avessero*

venduto.

If I had
sold, etc.

*se avessi
se avessi
se avesse
se avessimo
se avesse
se avessero*

dormito.

If I had
slept, etc.

INFINITIVE MOOD.

PRESENT.

cant-are, to sing.*vend-ere*, to sell.*dorm-ire*, to sleep.

PAST.

aver cantato,
to have sung.*aver venduto*,
to have sold.*aver dormito*,
to have slept.

GERUND.

PRESENT.

cant-ando, singing. .*vend-endo*, selling.*dorm—*, sleeping.

PAST.

avendo cantato,
having sung.*avendo venduto*,
having sold.*avendo dormito*,
having slept.

PARTICIPLES.

PRESENT.

cant-ante, singing.*vend-ente*, selling.*dorm—*, sleeping.

PAST.

cant-ato, sung.*vend-uto*, sold.*dorm-ito*, slept.

The present of the Infinitive mood may be used with the definite article, as a noun:—*Il vivere è bello*.

Verbs in *care* or *gare* take an *h* whenever, in conjugating such verb, the *c* or *g* precedes an *e* or an *i*; and those in *ciare* and *giare* take no second *i* throughout their conjugation. The letter *i* in these verbs is also dropped before an *e*.

il marinaio, the sailor.*l'accidente*, the accident.*il pianoforte*, the piano.*la lode*, the praise.*amare*, to love.*le nuove*, the news.*il baule*, the trunk.*il dovere*, the duty.*l'avolo*, the grandfather.*pensare a*, to think of.

trovare, to find.
perdonare, to pardon.
biasimare, to blame.
cominciare, to commence.
ridere, to laugh.
lasciare, to leave.
meritare, to deserve.
arrivare, to arrive.
assaggiare, to try.
invecchiare, to grow old.
alcune volte, sometimes.
insieme, together.

ritornare, to return.
parlare, to talk.
ascoltare, to listen.
cercare, to seek.
entrare, to enter.
suonare, to play (an instrument).
giocare, to play (a game).
lodare, to praise.
imparare, to learn.
visitare, to visit.
fare, to do.
disobbediente, disobedient.

da per tutto, everywhere.

XXXI.

1. Amate la vostra amica? Sì, Maria, ella è una donna vezzosa. 2. Pensa a sua madre? Sì, sua madre è andata a Roma oggi. 3. Quando ritornava dalla città? Alle cinque. 4. Avete trovato il vostro anello? No, non cercherò l'anello ora. 5. Cantate voi? Sì, canto alcune volte. 6. Parliamo di vostro padre che è in Australia. 7. Il padre non perdonerà suo figlio. 8. Non ascoltò la storia del marinaio. 9. Non biasimiamo l'uomo perchè l'accidente non fu sua colpa. 10. Ha cercato da per tutto; ma non ha avuto nuove della ragazza. 11. Le vacanze cominceranno la settimana prossima. 12. Dov'era il mio lapis? Io trovai il vostro lapis sulla mia tavola.

1. What are you thinking of? I was thinking of my home when you came in. 2. When did he return from the country? Yesterday, sir. 3. The boys were laughing while I was playing the piano. 4. Have you found the trunks you left at the railway? Yes. 5. The master always praises his pupils when they deserve praise. 6. I have not learned my lesson. 7. Do you like grapes? Yes, and I also like pineapples and cherries. 8. When my brother shall have arrived we shall visit your sister together. 9. Do not blame the servant, he tries to do his duty. 10. My grandfather is growing old. 11. Let us speak of your home in the country. 12. He will not pardon his disobedient pupil.

il suddito, the subject.
l'esercito, the army.
l'assalto, the attack.
il seme, the seed.
la pesca, the peach.
onorare, to honour.
comandare, to command.
ricevere, to receive.
perdere, to lose.
seminare, to sow.
comprare, to buy.

certamente, certainly.

mangiare, to eat.
romano, Roman.
il nemico, the enemy.
combattere, to fight.
temere, to fear.
cedere, to give way.
credere, to believe.
diffamare, to slander.
domandare, to ask.
incontrare, to meet.
innanzi, before.

XXXII.

1. Tutti i leali sudditi onorano la patria. 2. Ha ella venduto la sua casa? No, signore. 3. I soldati combattono bene quando questo generale comanda l'esercito. 4. Teme il maestro? No, ma tutti i ragazzi temono il loro padre. 5. Ho ricevuto una lettera dal dottore, egli è a Roma. 6. I nemici cederono innanzi all' assalto dei soldati romani. 7. Ho perduto il mio anello nel parco; avete trovato l'anello? 8. Incontraste mio fratello nel bosco? No, io credo che è nel giardino. 9. Avete venduto il vostro orologio? No, certo, io non venderò l'orologio. 10. Non ha ella ricevuto un regalo da mia madre? No, non ha ricevuto regali. 11. Non vendeste la vostra casa al negoziante? 12. Ricevè ella un libro ed una lettera da mia madre?

1. I have never found the gold ring I lost in the garden last May. 2. Does your friend (*f.*) sing? Yes, she sings very well. 3. The gardener is sowing his seeds; it is now spring. 4. Do not slander your neighbours. 5. I have sought my exercises and books everywhere. 6. She would have bought many books if she had had money. 7. I shall ask your mother if she likes peaches. 8. What will you do to-morrow? I shall visit the painter and his wife. 9. Have you met my little brother? No. 10. They were eating all day yesterday; they will certainly be ill. 11. We have always honoured our parents. 12. To honour parents is a duty.

<i>il piatto</i> , the plate.	<i>facilmente</i> , easily.
<i>il poltrone</i> , the coward.	<i>lo sparare</i> , 'he firing.
<i>sentire</i> , to feel.	<i>la colazione</i> , the breakfast.
<i>partire</i> , to depart.	<i>la traditora</i> , the traitress.
<i>sortire</i> , to go out.	<i>bollire</i> , to boil.
<i>sdrucire</i> , to tear, to rend.	<i>cucire</i> , to sew.
<i>seguire</i> , to follow.	<i>pagare</i> , to pay.
<i>mancare</i> , to fail.	<i>fuggire</i> , to run away.
<i>prendere</i> , to take.	<i>cominciare</i> , to begin.
<i>vedere</i> , to see.	<i>spiare</i> , to spy.
<i>cercare</i> , to seek.	<i>rimanere</i> , to remain.
<i>allora</i> , then.	<i>scorso</i> , past.
<i>fuga</i> , flight.	<i>bravo</i> , brave.
<i>padrone</i> , master.	<i>messo</i> , put.
<i>desiderare</i> , to desire, to want.	

XXXIII.

1. La ragazza dorme profondamente. 2. La serva ha messo i piatti nel forno perchè erano freddi. 3. Bolle l'acqua? Non ancora. 4. Il re partì per Parigi stamattina. 5. Cuciono le vostre cugine bene? Sì, cuciono benissimo. 6. È mio padre sortito? Sì, sortì alle nove stamattina. 7. Avete del danaro? Sì, pagherò il biglietto ora. 8. Lo sparare dei soldati ha messo in fuga l'esercito dei nemici. 9. Il poltrone fuggì dalla battaglia. 10. Il cane seguirà sempre il suo padrone. 11. A che ora partirono? Alle tre e mezzo. 12. Cominciate la vostra lezione.

1. Will you pay the money? 2. I would have paid last week, but I had no money then. 3. Thou failest to do thy duty. 4. Let us begin to eat our breakfast; John is late. 5. They will have walked twenty miles in one day. 6. Take the book I left in your room, and let us walk in the park. 7. The traitor followed the brave soldiers. 8. I should have liked to see your friend's wife. 9. My grandmother has grown very old and always remains in her room. 10. I have searched for your watch, but have only found Mary's ring. 11. Leave us; we do not want to speak now. 12. Would you have commenced the work if I had been here? Yes.

THE PRONOUN.

Personal Pronouns.

ABSOLUTE.

1. Personal Pronouns are either *absolute* and conjugated with the prepositions, or *conjunctive*, which are never used with a preposition.

2. The absolute Personal Pronouns are :—

NOMINATIVE.

io, noi, I, we.
tu, voi, thou, you.
egli, egliino, he, they (*m.*).
ella, elleno, she, they (*f.*).

OBJECTIVE.

me, noi, me, us.
te, voi, thee, you.
lui, loro, him, them (*m.*).
lei, loro, her, them (*f.*).

3. *Egli* is often written *ci* and *c'*; and *lei*, when written with a capital, is often used in the nominative, and then means "you."

4. Other absolute Personal Pronouns are: *esso, desso*, he; *essa, dessa*, she; *essi, dessi*, they (*m.*); *esse, desse*, they (*f.*).

5. *Sè*, himself, herself, itself, themselves, is used only in the objective cases in the singular and plural.

6. *Me, te, sè* are often contracted when with the preposition *con* and written *meco, teco, seco*.

CONJUNCTIVES.

1. The Conjunctive Personal Pronouns are:—

Singular.

mi, me, to me.
ti, thee, to thee.
gli, to him.
li, lo, him.
le, to her.
la, her.
Le, to you.
La, you.

Plural.

ci, ne, us, to us.
vi, you, to you.
loro, to them.
li, them (*m.*).
le, them (*f.*).

2. These pronouns *precede* the verb in the

- (A) Indicative: *Vi mando un libro*, I send you a book.
- (B) Conditional: *Ci vedrebbe*, he could see us.
- (C) Subjunctive: *Gli farà piacere che lo aiuti*, he will be pleased for you to help him.
- (D) Imperative Negative: *Non lo fate*, do not do it.

3. They *follow* the verb and are joined to it in the

- (A) Imperative Affirmative: *Datemi una lira*, give me a lira.
- (B) Infinitive: *Non posso cantarla*, I cannot sing it.
- (C) Gerund: *Vedendolo, gli parlò*, seeing him, he spoke to him.
- (D) Past Participle when used without the auxiliary verb: *Vedutala, egli la salutò*, having seen her, he bowed to her.
- (E) *Loro* is never joined to the verb.

4. When the termination of the verb is accented these pronouns may precede or follow the verb, the first letter of the pronoun being doubled in the latter case (except in the case of *gli*): *Lo darò* and *darollo*; *gli dà*, *dagli*.

5. If two conjunctives are together the first one changes the *i* into *e* only for the sake of euphony: *Me la diede* (instead of *mi la diede*), he gave it to me.

6. These pronouns are generally used instead of the Possessive Adjectives when they refer to parts of the body or dress: *Mi cadde il cappello*, my hat fell; *mi sono tagliato il dito*, I have cut my finger.

7. *Ne* (like the French "en") is used of persons and things: *Ne parlò*, he spoke of it. *Vai a Parigi?* do you go to Paris? *Ne vengo*, I come from there.

8. *Ci* and *vi* (like the French “y”) mean also “there”:
Io vado al teatro, ci vieni anche tu? I am going to the
 theatre, are you also coming there? *Vi andrò domani*, I shall
 go there to-morrow.

<i>il giorno natalizio</i> , the birthday.	<i>la cioccolata</i> , the chocolate.
<i>dare</i> , to give:	<i>il tozzo</i> , the piece.
<i>aprire</i> , to open.	<i>portare</i> , to bring.
<i>scritto</i> , written.	<i>io non posso</i> , I cannot.
<i>sudicio</i> , dirty.	<i>elleno vanno</i> , they go (<i>f.</i>).
<i>né . . . né</i> , neither . . . nor.	<i>udire</i> , to hear.
<i>stesso, medesimo</i> , same.	<i>senza pericolo</i> , without danger.

XXXIV.

1. È tua madre stata qui? Sì, ed ha portato un regalo per voi e per me. 2. Datemi un bicchiere d'acqua, io ho gran sète. 3. Date quel cappello a me e non a mia sorella, ella ha avuto recentemente un cappello nuovo. 4. Aprite la porta per lei; io non posso, ho due tazze nelle mani. 5. La ragazza va meco al bosco, dove sono i suoi fratelli. 6. Il re stesso ha domandato del soldato. 7. Io stesso ho dormito profondamente, ma la mia amica è ammalata e non ha dormito tutta la notte. 8. Egli pensa sempre a sè, e non pensa nè a voi nè a me. 9. Ho avuto una lettera da loro, eglino stessi saranno qui questa sera, ma il loro amico sarà qui domani. 10. È stato qui ed egli medesimo ha portato dei fiori per Lei. 11. È vero che tua sorella è qui e che la sua amica è con lei? 12. Dov'è il cane? Meco.

1. Speak to me about home and your family. 2. Give me a cup of chocolate and a piece of bread; I am very hungry. 3. The painter himself talked to us about his picture. 4. Why have you given the watch to her and not to her sister? 5. I have given the watch to her because it is her birthday. 6. How old is she? Sixteen years old to-day. 7. Give me some apples and some oranges. 8. Let the servants (*f.*) go with them to the wood. 9. It is not true that John is going to Cairo. 10. The ladies themselves are going to the country to-morrow. 11. She has written a letter to us; she has

arrived safely. 12. You yourselves have heard his stories; I do not believe them.

la testa, the head.
il nonno, the grandfather.
lodare, to praise.
duole, it aches.
dire, to tell.
finire, to finish.
attento, careful.
amichévole, friendly.
a letto, in bed.

sperare, to hope.
mostrare, to show.
scrivere, to write.
leggere, to read.
rotto, broken.
eventualmente, eventually.
a dispetto di, in spite of.
avanti, before.
o . . . o, whether . . . or.

XXXV.

1. Non gli date il libro, egli non è at'ento. 2. Spero che il ragazzo mi ami eventualmente. 3. Egli le ha dato un calamaio d'argento, glielo ha dato perchè è il suo giorno natalizio. 4. Dov'è il tuo nuovo orologio? 5. A dispetto dei comandi di mio padre, farollo. 6. Siete la sua amica? Sì, io le sono amica. 7. La ragazza amava vederla, elleno sono state sempre amiche. 8. Il maestro lodava gli allievi, egli loro ha dato un giorno di vacanza. 9. Non posso scrivere più, mi duole il braccio. 10. Dov'è il suo cappello? Non posso trovarlo e io me ne vado senza. 11. Voi che siete stati alla città di Roma che cosa ne pensate. 12. È questo il vostro orologio? Datemelo.

1. He will not read it before you return from the theatre. 2. He will give it to me there, whether he has finished it or no. 3. I cannot go; my head aches. 4. I have heard that he has broken his arm. 5. She has heard of the death of her friend (*f.*) whom she loved. 6. When he had given me my hat, we departed. 7. Tell me the story of the battle, grandfather. 8. Will you be a good boy, if I tell it to you? Yes. 9. We walked by the bank of the river; tell me whom do you think we met there? 10. Peter has broken his leg and has been in bed. 11. I have heard that his father has given him a present. 12. I saw you when you were at his house this morning.

la verità, the truth.

Luisa, Louisa.

Francesco, Francis.

la dispensa, the cupboard.

stanco, tired.

ecco, here it is.

senza, without.

il tempo, the time.

Giorgio, George.

la camminata, the walk.

cercare, to look for.

se volete or *di grazia*, please.

dico, I say.

vuole, he wishes.

contento, pleased.

XXXVI.

1. Avete veduto il mio cane? Eccolo qui! 2. Ecco un esercizio italiano che ho scritto ora. 3. Siete le sorelle di questa ragazza? Sì, noi le siamo. 4. Sono quelli i vostri cappelli? Sì, li sono. 5. Siete contente? Sì, lo siamo. 6. Sono i soldati arrivati? Sì, lo sono. 7. È mio zio nel castello? Sì, vi è. 8. Va Ella a Parigi? No, ne vengo. 9. Non posso andare al parco senza loro. 10. Dico sempre la verità e ne sono contenta. 11. Ecco un tozzo di pane; ne vuole Ella? Sì, ne avrò un pezzettino. 12. Avete perduto i vostri libri? Sì, signore, li abbiamo perduti.

1. I have now told you the story: what do you think of it? I do not believe it. 2. Think of it this evening, if you have time. 3. Are you going to Iceland? No, I am coming thence. 4. I have looked everywhere for George; here he is. 5. Is my friend Louisa your sister? Yes, she is. 6. Why do you not bring my coat? I cannot go into the garden without it. 7. Were you ill yesterday? Yes, we were. 8. What have you there, Francis? 9. I have some peaches and some cherries. Give me some, I am hungry. 10. Are the glasses in the cupboard? Yes, give me one of them, please. 11. Are you tired after your long walk? 12. Yes, we are, and hungry too.

Demonstrative Pronouns.

1. They are the same as the adjectives given on p. 38, *questo*, *questo*, and *quello*.

2. Irregular forms are also *questi* and *quegli*; nominative singular masculine of persons: *costui* (*m.*), *costei* (*f.*), *costoro* (*plur.*); *colui* (*m.*), *colei* (*f.*), *coloro* (*plur.*).

3. *Ciò* is used only in a general sense for "that which": *Fa ciò che ti dico*: do what I tell you.

la diligenza, the diligence.

il giglio, the lily.

domandare, to ask for.

forse, perhaps.

la ricompensa, the reward.

dianzi, before.

solamente, only.

sfiarito, faded.

XXXVII.

1. Questa è la vostra penna e quella è la penna di Giovanni. 2. Avete veduto quest' uomo dianzi? No, egli è l'amico di mio fratello. 3. Costesta ragazza merita una ricompensa pella sua diligenza. 4. Amate ambo le sorelle? No, solamente costei è la mia amica. 5. È colui tuo zio? Sì, e colei con lui è mia zia. 6. Quest' uomo è ricco ma quegli è povero. 7. Chi ha trovato questo? Il figlio del soldato. 8. Ha tua sorella ricevuto il regalo? Sì, ella ha ricevuto ciò che domandava. 9. Chi è costui? Egli è il servo di mio fratello. 10. Chi è colei? Ella è la sorella di mia zia. 11. Sono costoro le vostre amiche? 12. Questi è il mio amico Pietro, e quegli è mio zio.

1. Is this the doctor's house? No; it is the master's. 2. Where is the solicitor's house? In the next street. 3. Who are those people? This is my friend George, and that is my cousin (*m.*). 4. Do you like the flowers I have gathered? 5. I like the roses and the violets very much. 6. These lilies are faded, and those (near you) are very small. 7. I have been in London, but that man has been in Rome. 8. Is the lady (that one *f.*) with him his wife? 9. No, she is his sister; the lady (the one *f.*) with the black dress is his wife. 10. I am tired, but my brother is more tired than I. 11. He is not well, perhaps? 12. No, his head aches.

Possessive Pronouns.

1. These Pronouns are the same as the Possessive Adjectives given at p. 37.

l'ombrello, the umbrella.
il musicante, the musician.
il battello, the boat.
il remo, the oar.

eccetto, except.
piccolo, small.
volere, to want.
la distanza, the distance.

basso, low.

XXXVIII.

1. E quest' ombrello il suo? No, è il mio. 2. Questi libri sono i miei e quelli giornali sono i tuoi. 3. Sono questi stivali i vostri? No, sono gli stivali degli allievi. 4. Hanno gli allievi scritto i loro esercizi? Hanno scritto i loro esercizi, ma questi ha perduto il suo. 5. Questi fiori sono i nostri, dove sono i vostri? 6. La sua è la più grande casa in quella strada. 7. È questa casa la sua od è quella della sua amica? Codesta casa è la mia. 8. Sono queste le mie arance o le tue? Esse sono le mie. 9. Hai visto le mie cugine? Ho visto le mie ma non le tue. 10. Il mio giardino è più bello che il tuo, ma quello del negoziante è il più bello. 11. Questa scatola non è la mia, è di tua sorella. 12. È colui tuo cugino? No, è il mio.

1. These flowers are prettier than yours. 2. Yes, but my garden is better than yours. 3. Is my horse smaller than his? 4. I think your horse is the smallest I have seen, except ours. 5. Mine is the highest house in this street. 6. That is true, sir; and the musician's is the lowest. 7. His is also the smallest. 8. That (near you) is my book; please give it to me. 9. If I give it to you, will you give me my knife? 10. Certainly, for it is yours, and I know that you need it. 11. Are those boats yours, or have they come from a distance? 12. This is mine, but the red boat with black oars is not.

Interrogative Pronouns.

1. *Chi?* = who, is used of persons only, and when in the nominative only in the singular, except with the verbs *essere*, *parere* or *sembrare*: *Chi sono coloro?* who are those men?

2. *Chi* is not used as a Relative Pronoun.

3. *Che?* = what: *Che desidera?* what do you want?

4. *Quale?* = which: *Quale di queste mele volete mangiare?* which of these apples do you wish to eat?

Francese, French.

il paese, the country.

l'opera, the opera, work.

portare, to wear.

il manicotto, the muff.

il bottegaio, the shopkeeper.

il colore, the colour.

La Svizzera, Switzerland.

conoscere, to know.

XXXIX.

1. A chi hai dato il mio lapis? A tuo padre. 2. Quale di questi giornali avrete? Cotesto giornale sulla tavola. 3. Chi sono queste ragazze? Sono le amiche di mia figlia. 4. Chi sono coloro? Coloro sono marinai Francesi. 5. Da chi ha ella ricevuto un regalo? Da sua zia. 6. A chi hai dato il libro di mio zio? A suo nipote. 7. In quale scatola avete trovato il manicotto? In quella di mia sorella. 8. Chi avete veduto nella bottega? Solamente il bottegaio e sua figlia. 9. Quale di queste lettere è la vostra? Questa è la vostra e questa è la mia. 10. A chi pensa? Ella pensa a sua sorella. 11. Di chi è questo giardino? È il mio. 12. Di che paese è questi? Egli è Italiano.

1. Which of these coats is yours, Paul? 2. I do not know; mine and my brother's are the same colours. 3. In what country have you been last month? In Switzerland. 4. Whose hat is this? It is mine. 5. Who have you seen this morning in the park? 6. I have seen my two cousins (m.),

three of their friends, and four of mine. 7. Which flowers will you take to the opera? 8. I shall take roses, and my sister, who is going also, will take lilies. 9. From whom comes this present? It comes from my father. 10. Which flowers will my sister wear? 11. To whom did you give that beautiful ring? 12. To my friend (*f.*) who has been ill.

Relative Pronouns.

1. *Che*, who, what, or which is used of persons or things: *L'uomo di che parli*, the man of whom you speak.

2. The nominative *che* may also become *cui* in the other cases: *L'uomo che canta*, the man who sings; *l'uomo di cui ella parla*, the man of whom she speaks.

3. *Il quale*, who or which, can replace *che* or *cui* in all cases: *Gli occhi che (i quali) ti guardano*, the eyes that look at you; *il danaro che (il quale) hai guadagnato*, the money which you have gained.

la malattia, the illness.
la gamba, the leg.
la maniglia, the bracelet.
parlare, to speak.
prestare, to lend.
obbligare, to oblige.
cadere, to fall.

scorso, past, last.
cattivo, naughty.
l'orologiaio, the watchmaker.
il viaggio, the journey.
punire, to punish.
morire, to die.
ubbidiente, obedient.

XI.

1. La ragazza che era con mia madre, è stata molto ammata. 2. Il maestro, di cui parliamo, è il nipote del mio amico Francesco. 3. Portatemi il libro del quale egli parla. 4. Il ragazzo, il padre di cui fu a Parigi il mese scorso, è andato a Londra. 5. L'attrice, che hai vista, è la moglie del tuo amico a Firenze. 6. Queste figlie, le quali amano la loro madre, sono sempre ubbidienti. 7. L'uomo a cui hai prestato l'ombrello, l'ha perduto. 8. Di che parlavate ieri col dottore? Noi

parlavamo della malattia di nostra madre. 9. Il maestro, dal quale l'allievo ha ricevuto un premio, si è rotta la gamba. 10. La ragazza, colla quale ella va alla scuola stamattina, non è qui ancora. 11. Il ragazzo fu cattivo, il che mi obbligò a punirlo. 12. L'oriuolo da cui comprava l'orologio, morì ieri.

1. Whose hat have you? 2. I have my cousin's hat (*m*); mine fell into the water. 3. From whom has Mary received these handsome presents? 4. The watch from her father, the ring from her mother, the bracelet from her sister. 5. Of what did you talk with your uncle yesterday? Of his journey? 6. My brother George, to whom you were very kind in Rome, asked me to bring this letter. 7. By whom have you been praised? By the master. 8. The girl with whom I was speaking is my sister. 9. Do not go; there is no one here who will lend you an umbrella. 10. The poor little old man of whom you were speaking is blind. 11. Charles, whose father you have seen, is coming here to-morrow. 12. William and Francis, with whom he is coming, go to London on Thursday.

INDEFINITE PRONOUNS.

1. Among the Indefinite Pronouns are:—

- (A) *altri* (sing.), some. *Altri ama il caffè, altri il tè,* some like coffee, some tea.
- (B) *alcuno*, some one. *Alcuno è stato qui a domandare di te,* some one has been here to ask after you.
- (C) *qualcuno*, some one. *Qualcuno vorrebbe vederti,* some one wants to see you.
- (D) *taluno*, some one; *taluno è venuto qui poco fa,* some one called here a little while ago.
- (E) *entrambi*, both. *I tuoi fratelli sono usciti entrambi pur ora,* your two brothers went out just now.

2. From the adjectives *ogni*, *qualche*, and *qualunque* (see p. 40) the following Indefinite Pronouns are formed:—

- (A) *ognuno*, every one. *Ognuno desidera la tua felicità*, every one desires your happiness.
- (B) *qualcuno*, *qualcheduno*, some one. *Qualcuno sta picchiando al portone*, some one is knocking at the front door.
- (C) *qualunque*, whoever. *Qualunque lo dica io affermerò il contrario*, whoever says it I shall say to the contrary.

These pronouns, like the adjectives from which they are derived, are only used in the singular.

3. *Qualsisia*, *qualsivoglia*, *chicchesisia*, *chicchesivoglia*, *chicchesifosse*, whoever, being formed from the verb, have the verbal plural forms *qualsisiano*, *qualsivogliano*, *chicchesisiano*, *chicchesivogliano*, *chicchesifossero*.

<i>la ragione</i> , the reason.	<i>il trasgressore</i> , the trespasser.
<i>la lira sterlina</i> , the pound (sterling).	<i>il coraggio</i> , the bravery.
<i>il lavoro</i> , the work.	<i>prendere parte a</i> , to take part in.
<i>ricompensare</i> , to reward.	<i>permettere</i> , to allow.
<i>bevère</i> , to drink.	<i>detto</i> , said, told.
<i>Pun l'altro</i> , one another.	<i>piangere</i> , to cry.
<i>tanti . . . quanti</i> , as many . . . as.	<i>gli uni e gli altri</i> , all.
<i>chiunque</i> , whosoever.	<i>altri</i> , the one . . . the other.
<i>qualcuno</i> , some one.	<i>taluno</i> , somebody.
<i>niuno</i> , none, nobody.	<i>alquanto</i> , some, a little.
<i>altro</i> , something else.	<i>nè . . . nè</i> , neither . . . nor.
<i>affatto</i> , altogether.	<i>tanto . . . quanto</i> , as much . . . as.
	<i>entrambi</i> , both.

XLI.

1. Ogni soldato, che prende parte alla battaglia, è bravo.
 2. Quallsisia vi va, è un trasgressore. 3. Quallsisiano le vostre ragioni, io non vi permetto d'andare con lei al teatro. 4. Le

due ragazze si amano l'una l'altra. 5. Gli uni e gli altri erano col negoziante al teatro questa sera. 6. Ha tanti cavalli quanti cani. 7. Altri va al parco, altri al museo. 8. Mille lire sterline sono un niente per voi. 9. Chiunque trova quell'uomo, sarà ricompensato. 10. Taluno è stato in quella camera, chi è? 11. Qualcuno mi ha detta la storia del coraggio del soldato. 12. Datemi alquanto danaro, non ne ho affatto.

1. Those brothers and sisters who live in the little red house love one another. 2. The merchant has as many horses as oxen. 3. There is nothing in the world so lovely as music. 4. You are both wrong; the ball is neither on Tuesday nor Thursday, but Wednesday. 5. What are you thinking of—your work? No; something else. 6. The dog has drunk as much milk as the cat. 7. Some one is waiting for you in the drawing-room, sir. 8. Who is it? I think it is the gentleman you met yesterday. 9. Whosoever is naughty shall be punished. 10. Every one is afraid of a mad dog. 11. We have both visited this place, many a time. 12. Some cry, some laugh.

PASSIVE FORM OF THE VERB.

1. The Passive is formed by conjugating the auxiliary *essere* with the Past Participle of the verb: *Io sono amata*, I am loved; *tu sei battuto*, you are beaten; *l'abito è sdrucito*, the dress is torn.

Observe the rule given on p. 28 about the agreement of the Past Participle when used with the verb *essere*.

2. *Venire* is sometimes used to form the Passive instead of *essere*.

3. The pronoun *si* may be used to form the Passive with the third person singular and plural: *si dice*, it is said; *in quel teatro si cantano molte canzoni*, at that theatre many songs are sung.

la promessa, the promise.
l'Elba, Elba.
il ladro, the thief.
il poliziotto, the policeman.
rubare, to steal.
dice, says.
ucciso, killed.
celebrare, to celebrate.
seguire, to pursue.
perciò, therefore.

arrabbiato, angry, mad (of a dog).
la rupe, the cliff.
la parola, the word.
l'automobile, the motor car.
il biglietto, the ticket, the note.
urtare, to knock against.
pronunciare, to pronounce.
esiliare, to banish.
arrestare, to arrest.
pericoloso, dangerous.
dopo, after.

XLII.

1. La ragazza è stata punita dal maestro, perchè è stata cattiva. 2. Le nozze di mia cugina sono state celebrate ieri. 3. Il cane di mia zia è stato ucciso, egli era arrabbiato e perciò pericoloso. 4. Il ladro ha rubato il mio anello, ma è stato arrestato dal poliziotto. 5. L'automobile urtò contro la rupe. 6. Mi domandò a quale bottega il libro era stato comprato. 7. I nipoti sono sempre stati amati dalla loro zia. 8. A che ora è il re arrivato a Firenze? Egli è arrivato a Firenze stamattina alle nove. 9. Da chi ha il generale ricevuto quel regalo? Quel regalo è stato ricevuto dalla regina. 10. Come si pronuncia questa parola francese? 11. Dopo la battaglia di Waterloo Napoleone fu esiliato all' isola di Sant' Elena. 12. Se noi non fossimo andati a Londra, noi non avremmo veduto il re.

1. A letter has been received from my sister, in which she says she will arrive in London to-morrow. 2. Where is the bottle of wine that was on the table this morning? The wine has been drunk by your brother and his friends. 3. The book had been bought before I arrived at the shop. 4. Where is the beautiful dog you had last year? It has been killed because it was mad. 5. How are these Italian words pronounced? In Italian every letter is pronounced. 6. Six months after the betrothal the wedding was celebrated. 7. Elba and Saint Helena are the islands to which Napoleon I. was banished. 8. He had pursued the thief for a long time

when the latter was arrested by the policeman. 9. Who has found my ring? Your ring has been found by my servant. 10. The pupil should have been praised, he learned his lesson well. 11. For whom was the note left? It was left for my cousin by the doctor's servant. 12. Who loves that disobedient girl? She is loved by her brother and by her sister.

Neuter Verbs.

1. An Active Verb, the action of which passes from the subject to an object (*il medico ha guarito l'ammalato*, the doctor has cured the sick), becomes neuter when the action remains with the subject: *il medico è guarito*, the doctor has recovered.

2. The active verb is conjugated with the auxiliary *avere*, and the neuter generally takes the auxiliary *essere*, although those referring to the state of the weather are used with *avere* or *essere*.

l'uccelletto, the little bird.
cessare, to cease.
nidificare, to build a nest.
partire, to start.
venuto (p.p.), come.
nafragare, to shipwreck.
tacere, to be silent.
forte, loudly.
cattivissimo, very bad.
benissimo, very well
la tempesta, the storm:
ballare, to dance.

impallidire, to become pale.
invecchiare, to grow old.
gelare, to freeze.
scorrere (p.p. *scorso*), to flow, to
 peruse.
approdare, to go ashore.
ridere (p.p. *riso*), to laugh.
avvenire (p.p. *avvenuto*), to hap-
 pen.
via, way.
or ora, presently.
quasi, almost.

XLIII.

1. Hai dormito profondamente? Non ho dormito bene la notte scorsa. 2. Balla bene la ragazza? Sì, ella balla benissimo. 3. Siete stati alla città oggi? Sì, e noi visitammo la bottega dell' oriolaio. 4. Perché è la figlia impallidita?

Perchè sua madre è molto ammalata. 5. È la tua amica arrivata? Non ancora. 6. Avete mai desinato a quest' albergo? No, mai. 7. Mio padre invecchia, non cammina molto ora. 8. L'uccelletto ha nidificato in quest' albero. 9. È mio zio arrivato? Sì, arrivò stamattina. 10. È la ragazza ritornata ancora dalla scuola? 11. Dov' è andata vostra zia? Alla casa della mia amica. 12. Ha gelato la notte scorsa? Sì, il tempo è stato cattivissimo.

1. Was your friend at home? No, he had already started for Paris. 2. Did you take a walk this morning, sir? Yes, I walked in the park. 3. Have you perused the newspaper, sir? Not yet; I have just arrived from the city. 4. Those children (f.) have danced too long, they will be tired. 5. Have you come from the town? 6. No, sir; I have come from the railway. On the way I met my father. 7. He was shipwrecked last May, and went ashore at Civita Vecchia. 8. Be quiet, children; you have been laughing too loudly. 9. When did you come from Rome, and when does he go to Florence? 10. I have come from Rome this morning; he is not going to Florence now. 11. Why has the lady turned pale? Because her brother has been killed. 12. What has happened? Nothing, sir.

Reflexive Verbs.

1. When the action of the verb returns to the subject the verb is called reflexive.

2. An active verb may be changed into a reflexive verb by the use of the conjunctive pronouns *mi, ti, si, ci, vi, si*.

3. Many English intransitive verbs become reflexive in Italian—*mi rallegro*, I rejoice; *ti addormenti*, you go to sleep; *si alza*, he gets up.

4. Reflexive verbs are recognised by the pronoun *si* being affixed to the infinitive—*rallegrarsi, addormentarsi, alzarsi*.

<i>l'abilità</i> , the cleverness.	<i>arrabbiarsi</i> , to get angry.
<i>i giovani</i> , the young people.	<i>contentarsi</i> , to be satisfied.
<i>l'inciviltà</i> , the rudeness.	<i>il fortino</i> , the fortress.
<i>il colle</i> , the hill.	<i>la giovine</i> , the young woman.
<i>finire</i> , to end.	<i>il comando</i> , the command.
<i>attristarsi</i> , to become sad.	<i>la medicina</i> , the medicine.
<i>vantarsi</i> , to boast.	<i>arrendersi</i> , to surrender.
<i>maritarsi</i> , to marry (of a woman).	<i>pensare</i> , to think.
<i>ammogliarsi</i> , to marry (of a man).	<i>innamorarsi</i> , to fall in love.
<i>sposarsi</i> , to marry.	<i>dimenticarsi</i> , to forget.
<i>levarsi</i> , to rise.	<i>querelarsi</i> , to complain.
<i>sentirsi</i> , to feel.	<i>vergognarsi</i> , to be ashamed.
<i>pentirsi</i> , to repent.	<i>impadronirsi</i> , to take possession.
<i>imbarcarsi</i> , to embark.	<i>rallegrarsi</i> , to rejoice.
<i>avanzarsi</i> , to advance.	<i>accorgersi</i> , to perceive.
	<i>essere dispiacente</i> , to be sorry.

XLIV.

1. È la battaglia finita? No, i soldati non si arrendono.
 2. Ella si attrista perchè pensa alla morte di suo fratello.
 3. Quegli allievi si vantano sempre della loro abilità. 4. Maria e Giovanni si sono innamorati e si mariteranno tosto. 5. Hai imparato la tua lezione? Sì, ma me la sarò dimenticata domani. 6. Il negoziante si leva ogni mattina alle sei. 7. Tu ti quereli sempre. Sì, oggi mi querelo perchè sento freddo. 8. Il ragazzo si vergognava, non aveva imparato la sua lezione. 9. Non si pente egli? No, egli si vanta della sua colpa. 10. I nemici si sono impadroniti del fortino vicino alla città. 11. Noi c'imbarcammo per l'Inghilterra la settimana ultima. 12. Mi rallegro che i nostri soldati si sono avanzati al fortino del nemico.

1. Those young people fell in love with each other last year, and now they are married. 2. Did you perceive the rudeness of that young woman? 3. I am sorry I was angry. 4. That boy was boasting of having written his exercise well. 5. Will the army surrender to-morrow? Not without the king's command. 6. When do you get up? At seven o'clock every morning, sir. 7. I am glad that your sister has bought

that dog. 8. What was your little cousin complaining of this morning? She was complaining because she felt cold. 9. The masters are not satisfied with the exercises their pupils have written. 10. They will take possession of the fort on the hill. 11. Your uncle forgot to take his medicine. 12. The soldiers advanced from the town this morning.

Impersonal Verbs.

1. Impersonal verbs are those that are only used in the third person, both singular and plural.

2. The most commonly used are:

<i>piovere</i> , to rain.	<i>accadere</i> }	to happen.
<i>grandinare</i> , to hail.	<i>avvenire</i> }	
<i>lampeggiare</i> , to lighten.	<i>didiacciare</i> , to thaw.	
<i>nevicare</i> , to snow.	<i>ghiacciare</i> , to freeze.	
<i>tuonare</i> , to thunder.	<i>dimoiare</i> , to thaw.	

3. Other verbs used impersonally are: *bastare*, to suffice; *bisognare*, to be necessary; *rincrescere*, to grieve.

4. The verbs *fare* and *essere* may be idiomatically used in impersonal forms: *fa bel tempo*, it is fine.

5. Verbs depending on impersonal verbs are generally put in the subjunctive mood: *bisogna che io la veda oggi*.

<i>vi è stato</i> , there has been.	<i>lavorare</i> , to work.
<i>fa chiaro di luna</i> , it is moonlight.	<i>parere</i> , to seem.
<i>divertirsi</i> , to play.	<i>sembrare</i> , to seem.
<i>fa umido</i> , it is damp.	<i>fa bel tempo</i> , it is fine weather.
<i>fa vento</i> , it is windy.	<i>fa caldo</i> , it is hot.
<i>piacere</i> , to please.	<i>uscire</i> , to go out.
<i>fa polvere</i> , it is dusty.	<i>fa freddo</i> , it is cold.
<i>due volte</i> , twice.	<i>sebbene</i> , although.
<i>grandinare</i> , to hail.	<i>soprabito</i> , overcoat.

XLV.

1. Grandina? No, piove e tuona. 2. Vi è stata una grande caduta di neve, ma ora la neve è didiacciata. 3. La neve non è didiacciata, è gelata. 4. Ti basta un tozzo di pane? No, un tozzo di pane non mi basta, datemi del butirro anche. 5. Dove andate? Nel bosco; fa chiaro di luna. 6. È meglio lavorare che divertirsi. 7. Pare che il tempo sia umido. 8. A me sembra che i dottori abbiano ragione. 9. Quando sarò a Parigi mi bisognerà un abito nuovo. 10. Ieri pioveva, ma oggi fa bel tempo sebbene faccia vento. 11. Tuona? No, ma lampeggia. 12. Mi piace vedervi.

1. Is it hailing now? Yes, and snowing also; but it does not thunder and lighten any more. 2. Yesterday it was thawing, but to-day it is freezing. 3. It was raining recently, but now it is a moonlight night. 4. It happened that I met my brother at the theatre twice. 5. Do you need an overcoat, Charles? No, it is too hot. 6. This piece of bread is enough for me. 7. Need I go out if it rains? 8. It is fine weather; we will walk to the town. 9. Do not go in the wood; it is too windy. 10. It is cold, windy, and dusty to-day. 11. Is it damp? No, it is moonlight and warm. 12. It is better to learn your lesson than to take a walk.

THE ADVERB.

1. Adverbs are either

(A) naturally so: as *quando*, when; *adesso*, now;

(B) or formed from the feminine adjective by the addition of the termination *mente*: *cara*, dear; *caramente*, dearly; *felice*, happy; *felicamente*, happily.

2. Adjectives ending in *e* preceded by *l* or *r* drop the final *e* and add *mente*: *debole*, weak; *debolmente*, feebly; *interiore*, internal; *interiormente*, internally.

3. The termination *mente* may be added to the feminine adjective also in its comparative or superlative degree : *facilissima*, very easy ; *facilissimamente*, very easily.

4. Adjectives in the masculine may also be used adverbially without any modification : *piano*, softly ; *forte*, loudly.

5. The following adverbs form their degrees of comparison irregularly :—

POSITIVE. COMPARATIVE.		SUPERLATIVE.	
		RELATIVE.	ABSOLUTE.
<i>bene</i> , well	<i>meglio</i> , better	<i>il meglio</i> , best	<i>benissimo</i> } very <i>ottimamente</i> } well.
<i>male</i> , badly	<i>peggio</i> , worse	<i>il peggio</i> , worst	<i>malissimo</i> } very <i>pessimamente</i> } badly.
<i>molto</i> , very	<i>più</i> , more	<i>il più</i> , most	<i>moltissimo</i> , very much.
<i>poco</i> , little	<i>meno</i> , less	<i>il meno</i> , least	<i>pochissimo</i> , very little.

6. Adverbs, like adjectives, may be used superlatively by the repetition of the positive : *male male*, very badly.

7. *Vie* is used before *più* and *meno* to strengthen their meaning : *vie più*, more and more ; *vie meno*, less and less.

8. *Davanti*, before, is only used of place : *La carrozza sta davanti la casa*, the carriage stands in front of the house. *Avanti*, before (of time only) : *La vedrò avanti le sette*, I shall see her before seven o'clock.

9. *Non* may be strengthened by the addition of *punto*, *mica* : *Non l'amo punto*, I do not like it at all.

10. By the help of prepositions, or by modifying the termination of a noun or adjective, adverbial expressions may also be formed : *a buon mercato*, cheaply ; *l'ubbiaco giaceva bocconi nella strada*, the drunken man was lying face downwards in the street.

l'attrice, the actress.
avanti, the day before yesterday.
avere fretta, to be in a hurry.
a tempo, in time.
davanti (place), before.
avanti (time), before.
sotto, under.
cercare, to search for.
da per tutto, everywhere.
volentieri, willingly.
a poco a poco, little by little.
dopo, afterwards.
l'uscio, the street door.
il mantello, the cloak.

il mal di denti, the toothache.
appena, as soon as.
subito, immediately.
presto, quickly.
qua e là, to and fro.
dentro, inside.
benissimo, very well.
a malincuore, unwillingly.
assai, very, much.
troppo, too much.
abbastanza, enough.
in fatti, in fact.
tutto, altogether, quite.
mai, ever.
non . . . mai, never.

XLVI.

1. Comprerò un nuovo cappello appena sarò arrivata a Parigi. 2. Avanti era alla casa di mia zia a Londra e domani sarò alla casa di mia cugina nella campagna. 3. Date-mi cotesto libro subito, ho fretta; se non fate presto, non sarò alla ferrovia a tempo. 4. Avete veduto la carrozza avanti? No, ma ora è davanti l'uscio. 5. È il cane sotto la tavola? No, corre qua e là nella strada. 6. Ha cercato l'anello dentro alla scatola? Sì, signore, l'ha cercato da per tutto. 7. Canta bene la figlia del negoziante? Sì, ella canta benissimo. 8. Questo ragazzo impara la sua lezione volentieri, ma quegli la impara a malincuore. 9. Avete assai di belle pitture? No, ne ho assai poche. 10. Avete del pane? Sì, non troppo, ma abbastanza. 11. Imparo la lingua italiana a poco a poco. 12. È l'attrice bellissima? Sì, infatti è la più bella attrice che abbia mai veduta.

1. We will buy the dog as soon as we arrive in London. 2. Will you be at my sister's house afterwards? 3. Bring me my boots immediately, John; I shall not be at the railway in time if you do not bring them quickly. 4. Where are my gloves

and my watch? They were here before dinner, but they are not here now. 5. Have you looked underneath my cloak and inside the box? 6. My brother was in Rome yesterday morning. 7. Why are you pacing to and fro? I have the toothache. 8. She sings well, but her beautiful sister sings better. 9. Your son learns very unwillingly. 10. The child has had some milk; has she had quite enough? 11. You will learn the Italian language little by little. 12. Do you think my friend's (*m.*) sister very beautiful? Yes; in fact I think she is the most beautiful lady I have ever seen.

<i>il traditore</i> , the traitor.	<i>di mala voglia</i> , unwillingly.
<i>il ragguaglio</i> , the report, the account.	<i>pure</i> , yet, however.
<i>il cantante</i> , the singer.	<i>il verso</i> , the verse.
<i>la tovaglia</i> , the towel, the tablecloth.	<i>il riparo</i> , the rampart.
<i>buono</i> , good, pleasant.	<i>il passaggio</i> , the passage.
<i>superbo</i> , magnificent.	<i>il poema</i> , the poem.
<i>credere</i> , to believe, to think.	<i>udire</i> , to hear.
<i>attendersi</i> , to expect.	<i>quasi quasi</i> , very nearly.
<i>possibilmente</i> , possibly.	<i>a mente</i> } by heart.
<i>tastone</i> , gropingly.	<i>a memoria</i> }
<i>da senno</i> , in earnest.	<i>lungo</i> , along.
<i>di tempo in tempo</i> , now and then.	<i>un' altra volta</i> , another time,
<i>a dispetto di</i> , in spite of.	again.
<i>dirimpetto a</i> , opposite.	<i>cantar falso</i> , to sing badly.
<i>a bello studio</i> , purposely.	<i>a buon mercato</i> , cheaply.
<i>carpone</i> , on all fours.	<i>vicino</i> , near.
	<i>in avvenire</i> , for the future.
	<i>sino a</i> , until.
	<i>talvolta</i> , sometimes.

XLVII.

1. Avete finito il vostro lavoro? Quasi quasi. 2. Sarà tuo padre qui or ora? No, era qui ieri; oggi è a Londra. 3. Forse la rappresentazione sarà migliore oggi; ne ho udito buoni ragguagli. 4. Se hai finito il tuo lavoro a tempo, sarai al parco questa sera? Possibilmente. 5. Spero che gli allievi avranno imparato questi versi a mente. 6. Il traditore andava

tastone lungo i ripari del castello. 7. Tuo padre fa da senno ; non ti perdonerà un' altra volta. 8. Di tempo in tempo l'allievo impara bene, ma generalmente impara di mala voglia. 9. Quest' uomo canta falso ; pure suo fratello è un cantante superbo. 10. Dove hai comprato cotesto cappello? L'ho comprato a buon mercato alla bottega dirimpetto alla ferrovia. 11. In avvenire la ragazza sarà punita quando non impara la sua lezione. 12. Il ragazzo era cattivo a bello studio.

1. I expect my brother Charles from Rome to-day ; but I fear that he will not arrive until to-morrow. 2. I do not like that book ; but perhaps it is better than you think. 3. If it is finished in time, will you give the painting to Pauline for her birthday? Possibly. 4. The girl has nearly finished her exercise. 5. I hope you will learn this poem by heart. 6. He went gropingly, sometimes on all fours, along the passage. 7. For the future I hope that you will work in earnest. 8. John works unwillingly, but now and then he works well. 9. We met the boy astride a camel. 10. Notwithstanding the rain, we have had a pleasant day. 11. Why do you not find my keys? I left them upon or near the table. 12. This dress is too dear.

PREPOSITIONS.

1. The real prepositions, as given at p. 9, are:—*di, a, da, con, fra, tra, per, in, su*.

2. Adverbs, however, are often used as prepositions, and when so used, if preceding a personal pronoun, they must be followed by a real preposition: *davanti a me*, before me ; *davanti la casa*, before the house.

l'aiuto, the help.

la dispensa, the cupboard, the pantry.

la sommità, the top.

il consiglio, the advice.

il vecchio, the old man.

il viaggio, the voyage.

nascóndere, to hide.

appiattatamente, stealthily.

mediante, by means of.

eccetto, except.

giusta, according to.

entro, within.

contro, against.

presso, near.

la libreria, the bookcase.

la ragione, the cause, the reason.

offeso, offended.

strisciare, to creep.

durante, during.

a dispetto } notwithstanding.

ad onta }

appiè, at the foot.

dietro, behind.

verso, towards.

XLVIII.

1. Durante il mese prossimo saremo a Firenze. 2. Mediante il suo aiuto arrivava alla sommità del colle. 3. A dispetto della pioggia io vado al bosco. 4. Eccetto mia sorella, noi saremo tutti al teatro questa sera. 5. Dov' è il mio abito? È dentro questo baule. 6. La carrozza è appiè del colle. 7. Giusta la lettera di mia madre ella sarà oggi a Roma. 8. Chi è quegli dietro a me? È un grande cantante. 9. I nemici sono entro le mura della città. 10. Ad onta dei buoni consigli di suo padre, egli è andato a Londra. 11. Noi camminammo verso il parco stamattina. 12. Ella è offesa contro la sua amica senza ragione. 13. Dov' è la ragazza? Nella dispensa.

1. By means of your help I found the shop I was seeking. 2. That poor old man was very ill during the voyage. 3. No one was with her, except her mother. 4. Notwithstanding their advice, I am going to London this month. 5. The boys are without money this week. 6. They were nearer to us than they had been before. 7. The story is not true, sir. 8. They will perhaps be here after the 5th of June. 9. According to William's letter I think he is not coming. 10. Yes; they will all be here, except my little cousin (*f.*) who is at school. 11. Let us hide behind the bookcase. 12. The cat crept stealthily along the wall.

CONJUNCTIONS.

1. Conjunctions are distinguished into copulative and disjunctive.

2. Copulative conjunctions are used to join together words and sentences: *La vide e le parlò*, he saw her and spoke to her.

3. Disjunctive conjunctions are used to separate words or sentences: *detemi questo libro, o quello*, give me this book or that.

4. *Perchè* used with the subjunctive means "in order that": *Le mandai una lettera perchè venisse a vedermi*, I wrote to her in order that she might come to see me.

5. *Per . . . che* used with the subjunctive means "however": *Per ricca ch' ella sia, non è felice*, however rich she may be, she is not happy.

Giulia, Julia.
andare a piedi, to walk.
tentare, to try.
generoso, generous.
fangoso, muddy.
facilmente, easily.
purchè, provided.
ma anche, but also.
nonostante, notwithstanding.
tuttavia, nevertheless.
la cognata, the sister-in-law.

aspettare, to wait.
riconoscere, to recognise.
tenere, to keep.
appena, as soon as, hardly.
soltanto, only.
e . . . e, as well as.
mentrechè, whilst.
per quanto che, however much
pure, however, yet, even.
dunque, therefore, so.
altresì, also, besides.

XLIX.

1. *Perchè* tu sia un buon ragazzo, avrai un premio. 2. Le mie figlie non sono nel parco perchè piove. 3. Mio padre mi ha dato e un anello e un orologio. 4. E il ragazzo andato alla

scuola? Sì, ma egli non ha nè libri nè lapis. 5. Mentre che sono alla bottega, comprerò un nuovo cappello. 6. Sebbene il soldato fosse ferito, salvò il suo compagno dai nemici. 7. Per quanto bene mia figlia impari la sua lezione, il maestro non la loda mai. 8. Ho comprato non soltanto una carrozza ma anche due cavalli. 9. Per ricco che il negoziante sia, non è un uomo generoso. 10. Nonostante fossimo in ritardo, ci aspettavano. 11. Mia cugina è ammalata, dunque non sarà al teatro questa sera. 12. Piove; tuttavia stamattina farò cinque miglia a piedi.

1. We were not at the theatre because my uncle was very ill. 2. They (*f.*) have invited their friend (*f.*) to dinner, as well as to the ball. 3. My mother bought two roses and also some beautiful violets at the market to-day. 4. You were late for school twice last week, therefore you will not have a prize. 5. Although we had not seen you for a year, we recognised you easily. 6. My sister is neither at the museum nor in the park this morning. 7. You will never sing well, however you try. 8. He bought not only a dog, but also two cats. 9. I do not blame him, provided he has a garden to keep them in (*m.*). 10. No, he has not a garden, and besides, his mother does not like cats. 11. Are you Julia's sister or her cousin? Neither the one nor the other; I am her sister-in-law. 12. Notwithstanding it rains every day, the road is hardly muddy.

INTERJECTIONS.

1. The Interjections most commonly used are: *ah!* *ah!*; *ahi!* *alas!*; *eh!* *hallo!*; *ohimè!* *woe is me!*; *olà!* *oh!*; *orsù!* *courage!*; *avanti!* *forward!*; *evviva!* *viva!* *hurrah!*; *zitto!* *hush!*; *guai!* *woe!*; *oh!* *oh!*; *deh!* *alas!*; *via!* *away!*; *bravo!* *well done!*

2. *Bravo* and *zitto* are declined like adjectives, even when used as interjections. *Brave, signorine, sono ben contento del vostro lavoro:* Well done, young ladies, I am very pleased with your work.

3. *Guai!* (woe!) must be followed by the preposition *a*.
Guai a voi, se non imparate le vostre lezioni; Woe to you! if
 you do not learn your lessons.

<i>il giorno di vacanza</i> , the holiday.	<i>via!</i> away!
<i>fortunato</i> , successful.	<i>benone!</i> very well!
<i>perfetto</i> , perfect.	<i>sfortunato</i> , unfortunate.
<i>sciocco</i> , foolish.	<i>eccellente</i> , excellent.
<i>incendiare</i> , to set on fire.	<i>ohimè!</i> woe is me!
<i>avvelenato</i> , poisoned.	<i>viva!</i> hurrah!
<i>per carità!</i> for Heaven's sake!	<i>aiuto!</i> help!

L.

1. Povera me! ho perduto il mio cane. 2. Brava! Maria, hai cantato benissimo. 3. Bravo! Giovanni, sei stato fortunato. 4. Zitte! ragazze, vostra madre è molto ammalata. 5. Per carità, sta zitto! 6. Oh povera ragazza, quanto è sfortunata! 7. Ohimè! il mio uccello morì ieri. 8. Via! noi siamo inseguiti. 9. Viva! ho un giorno di vacanza. 10. Aiuto! un ladro è nella casa. 11. O povero a me! quanto sono stanco. 12. Ahi! il generale è ferito.

1. Well done! Mary; your exercise is perfect. 2. Alas! the soldier is wounded. 3. Help! the house has been set on fire. 4. Very well! your work is excellent. 5. O poor Mary! her books have been stolen. 6. What a foolish girl to leave them in the garden! 7. Oh, what a beautiful book! Poor boy! you are very ill. 8. Hush! little girls; your sister is sleeping. 9. Alas! my cat is dead. 10. Good gracious! It was in the garden only this morning. 11. It has been poisoned, alas!

IRREGULAR VERBS.

Only the irregular forms are given in the following list; and only the first person singular of irregular tenses, if such tenses follow the same irregularity.

Of the Defective verbs, the tenses are wanting whose space is left blank.

Verbs marked * have also the regular forms.

Verbs marked † are Impersonal.

Verbs marked ‡ are Defective.

Tenses formed regularly are indicated by a dash —

Andare, to go. *Pres. Ind.*, vo or vado, vai, va, vanno.
Pres. Subj., vada, vada, vada, vádano. *Fut.*, andrò, etc.
Conditional, andrei, etc. *Imperative*, va, vádano.

* *Bévere*, here, to drink. *Past Def.*, bevvi, bevve, hévvero. *Fut.*, berò, etc. *Conditional*, berei, etc. *Past Part.*, beuto.
Cadere, to fall. *Past Def.*, caddi, cádde, cáddero. *Fut.*, cadrò, etc. *Conditional*, cadrei, etc.

Cogliere, to gather. *Pres. Ind.*, colgo, colgono. *Past Def.*, colsi, colse, colsero. *Pres. Subj.*, colga, colga, colga, colgano. *Fut.*, corrò, etc. *Conditional*, correi, etc. *Past Part.*, colto.

Dare, to give. *Pres. Ind.*, do, dàì, dà, diamo, date, danno. *Past Def.*, diedi or detti, desti, dette or diede, demmo, deste, dettero or diedero. *Fut.*, darò, etc. *Conditional*, darei, etc. *Pres. Subj.*, dia, dia, dia, díano. *Imper. Subj.*, dessi, etc.

la scala portatile, the ladder.
il ghiaccio, the ice.
il bazar, the bazaar.
l'omnibus, the omnibus.
il concerto, the concert.
di già, already.
lavorare indefessamente, to
 work hard.

il falegname, the joiner.
la fretta, the haste.
il ribes, the gooseberry.
il ragazzino, the little boy.
il convoglio, the train.
il gabinetto, the cabinet, office.
grazie, thanks.
spendere, to spend.

pattinare, to skate.

LI.

1. Andrò alla chiesa stamattina, ci vai tu anche? No, vi andai ieri. 2. Va al mercato, Maria, e compra dei fiori e delle frutta. 3. Andremmo al teatro se nostra madre non fosse ammalata. 4. Che berà la ragazza? Beve sempre acqua. 5. Il cane beveva il latte del gatto. 6. Il falegname cadde dalla scala portatile nella strada. 7. Non andare in fretta, tu cadrà su questo ghiaccio. 8. Correrò le rose per te? Grazie, le ho di già colte. 9. Colgo i ribes ora invece di domani. 10. Perché mi dà questo biglietto, ragazzino? Perché il mio padrone ve lo manda, signore. 11. Ti darò due scellini da spendere al bazar, Giovanni. 12. Dare buon consiglio non è difficile.

1. I shall go in the omnibus with my little sister, and you and my uncle will go in the train. 2. They asked me again if you were going to the concert to-night. 3. My father works hard in his office every day. 4. He will not drink any wine this evening. 5. They have asked me whether you drink wine or beer? I drink only water. 6. The boy fell from a ladder last week. 7. I should fall if I tried to skate. 8. Shall I gather the roses for you? Thank you, I have already gathered them. 9. The gardener is gathering the gooseberries for my friend. 10. I gave you the umbrella this morning, Mary; have you lost it? 11. They will always give you more for that book than you paid for it. 12. I should have given you a prize, John, if you had learned your lesson well.

Dire, to say. This verb is almost regular if conjugated from the old Infinitive, *dicere*. *Pres. Ind.*, dico, dici, dice, diciamo, dite, dicono. *Imper.*, diceva, etc. *Past Def.*, dissi, dicesti, disse, dicemmo, diceste, dissero. *Pres. Sub.*, dica, etc. *Imper. Sub.*, dicessi, etc. *Gerund*, dicendo. *Past Part.*, detto.

Dolere, to pain, ache, is generally used with the reflexive pronoun. *Pres. Ind.*, dolgo, duoli, duole, dogliamo, doglono. *Past Def.*, dolsi, dolse, dolsero. *Pres. Subj.*, dolga, dolga, dolga, dogliamo, dogliate, doglano. *Fut.*, dorro, etc. *Gerund*, dogliendo.

Dovere, to be obliged, to owe, must. *Pres. Ind.*, devo or debbo or deggio, devi or dèi, deve or dee, dobbiamo, devono or débbono. *Fut.*, dovrò, etc. *Cond.*, dovrei, etc. *Pres. Subj.*, debba, debba, debba, dobbiamo, dobbiate, débbero.

Fare, to do, to make. *Pres. Ind.*, faccio or fo, fai, facciamo, fanno. *Imper.*, faceva, etc. *Past Def.*, feci, facesti, fece, facemmo, faceste, fécano. *Fut.*, farò, etc. *Cond.*, farei, etc. *Pres. Subj.*, faccia, etc. *Imper. Subj.*, facessi, etc. *Gerund*, facendo. *Past Part.*, fatto.

Morire, to die. *Pres. Ind.*, muoio or moro, muori, muore, muóiono or muórono. *Fut.*, morirò, etc. *Cond.*, morrei, etc. *Pres. Subj.*, muoia, muoia, muoia, muóiano. *Imper.*, muori. *Past Part.*, morto.

il franco, the franc.
il próssimo, the neighbour.
contraddire, to contradict.
aver paura, to be afraid.
la focaccia, the tart, cake.

l'occhio, the eye.
occupato, busy.
scortese, impolite.
dolersi, to ache, to complain.
rotto (Past Part. of *rompere*),
 broken.

LII.

1. L'uomo dice che la storia che abbiamo sentita non è vera.
 2. Ella diceva che non andrebbe alla bottega oggi perchè era troppo occupata. 3. Non contraddire tuo padre, Giovanni; sei molto scortese. 4. Mi duole la testa stamattina. 5. Camminammo tanto che i piedi ci dolavano. 6. Devi levarti Giorgio: sono le otto. 7. Ti dovrei ora quattordici franchi se non avessi comprato questi guanti per te. 8. Che faremo Sabato? Andiamo al teatro. 9. Amo le focacce le quali tua madre fa. 10. Che fate? Facciamo dei nuovi abiti pel ballo domani. 11. Il vostro vicino ha la febbre. 12. Nostro fratello è molto ammalato; speriamo che non morrà.

1. What have you said to my uncle? I said that I did not think your garden so pretty as ours. 2 He says we shall be late for the train. 3. They told me that you said you would

not be in Paris before September. 4. My eyes ached last Saturday after the play. 5. Did you say that they were complaining of their servant (*f.*)? 6. You must go to the station this afternoon to meet your sister. 7. You said I need not go to school this morning if my head ached. 8. What have you done, Mary? I have broken the plate. 9. We made these cakes this morning. 10. What did you say that she was making yesterday? She was making a dress for her sister. 11. That brave soldier died after the battle. 12. All these flowers will die before the evening.

Parere, to seem, to look. *Pres. Ind.*, paio, páiono or párono. *Past Def.*, parvi, parve, párvero. *Fut.*, parrò, etc. *Conditional*, parrei, etc. *Pres. Subj.*, paia, paia, paia, páiano. *Past Part.*, parso.

Porre, to put. *Pres. Ind.*, pongo, poni, pone, poniamo, ponete, póngono. *Imper.*, poneva, etc. *Past Def.*, posi, ponesti, pose, ponemmo, poneste, pósero. *Imper.*, poni, ponete. *Pres. Subj.*, ponga, ponga, ponga, poniamo, poniate, póngano. *Imper. Subj.*, ponessi, etc. *Gerund*, ponendo. *Past Part.*, posto.

Potere, to be able. *Pres. Ind.*, posso, puoi, può or puote, possiamo, pòssono. *Fut.*, potrò, etc. *Conditional*, potrei, etc. *Pres. Subj.*, possa, etc.

Rimanere, to remain, to stop. *Pres. Ind.*, rimango, rimángono. *Past Def.*, rimasi, rimase, rimásero. *Fut.*, remarrò, etc. *Conditional*, rimarrei, etc. *Pres. Subj.*, rimanga, rimango, rimanga, rimángano. *Past Part.*, rimasto.

Salire, to ascend. *Pres. Ind.*, salgo or salisco, sali or salisci, sale or salisce, sagliamo, sálgono. *Pres. Subj.*, salga or salisca, salga or salisca, salga or salisca, sagliamo, sagliate, sálgano or saliscano.

Erba, the grass.

il nido, the nest.

Prendere interesse in, to take interest in.

mandare, to send.

poco poco, very little.

la foglia, the leaf.

la gente, the people.

il monte, the mountain.

le scale, the stairs.

riposarsi, to rest.

deporre, to depose.

LIII.

1. La tua amica non pareva prender interesse nella rappresentazione. 2. Parrò meglio quando mi sarò riposata. 3. La ragazza pare stanca, ha lavorato troppo. 4. Poniamo le rose sull'erba mentre che cogliamo delle foglie. 5. La gente di quel paese depose il re. 6. Tu potresti andare meco questa sera, se non camminassi ora. 7. La ragazza potrà venire allo studio or ora. 8. Spero che potranno mandarci una lettera da Roma. 9. Rimarremo sino alla settimana prossima, se avessimo avuto nuove dai nostri genitori. 10. Quanto danaro ti rimane? Poco poco. 11. Non salisco più scale, mi duole la testa. 12. I ragazzi salgono sugli alberi per trovare nidi di uccelli.

1. You appear unhappy, sir? I seem more unhappy than I am. 2. The fruit appeared good, but was not fresh. 3. Did you say that the horse seemed tired? No; it seemed thirsty, and we gave it some water. 4. Place those plates on this table and bring some cakes, Mary. 5. I put your hat and stick on the table, sir. 6. Will you be able to take this book to the library for me? Yes, sir. 7. He cannot find his gloves; can you tell me where they are? 8. We shall be able to meet you this afternoon. 9. We shall remain in Florence until Tuesday. 10. He would have seen them (*m.*) if he had remained at his uncle's house. 11. We climb that hill every day when we go to school. 12. Go upstairs, John, and find my hat.

Sapere, to know. *Pres. Ind.*, so, sai, sa, sappiamo, sanno. *Past Def.*, seppi, seppe, séppero. *Fut.*, saprò, etc. *Conditional*, saprei, etc. *Pres. Sub.*, sappia, etc. *Imper.*, sappi, sappiate.

Sedere, to sit down. *Pres. Ind.*, siedo or seggo or seggio, siedi, siede, sediamo or seggiamo, siédono or séggono. *Pres. Subj.*, sieda or segga or seggia, etc., sediamo or seggiamo, sediate or seggiate, siédano or séggano. *Imper.*, siedi. *Gerund*, sedendo.

Spègnere, to extinguish, to put out. *Pres. Ind.*, spengo, spengiamo, spengono. *Past Def.*, spensi, spense, spensero. *Pres. Subj.*, spenga, etc., spengiamô, spèngano. *Past Part.*, spento.

Tenere, to hold. *Pres. Ind.*, tengo, tieni, tieno, tengono. *Past Def.*, tenni, tenne, ténnero. *Fut.*, terrò, etc. *Conditional*, terrei, etc. *Pres. Subj.*, tenga, etc., tenghiamo or teniamo, tenghiate or teniate, téngano. *Imper.*, tieni.

Trarre, to draw, to pull. *Pres. Ind.*, traggo, trai or traggi, trae or tragge, traiamo or traggiamo or traghiamo, traete, traggono. *Imper.*, traeva, etc. *Past Def.*, trassi, traesti, trasse, traemmo, traeste, trássero. *Pres. Subj.*, tragga, etc., traiamo, traiate, traggano. *Imper. Subj.*, traessi, etc. *Imper.*, trai, tranne, traete. *Gerund*, traendo. *Past Part.*, tratto.

signora, madam.
il raffreddore, the cold.
il salottino, the sitting-room.
il rumore, the noise.
la soma, the load.
ottenere, to obtain.
dilatare, to expand.
pesante, heavy.
il gaz, the gas.
la cucina, the kitchen.

la bellezza, the beauty.
il calore, the heat.
la canzone, the song.
la lira sterlina, the pound sterling.
accanto a, beside.
ad alta voce, aloud.
appartenere, to belong.
preferire, to prefer.
di valore, valuable.

permettere, to permit.

IIV.

1. Quante lingue sapete? Soltanto tre, signore. 2. Dovresti sapere la tua lezione meglio, Luigi. 3. Sapremo subito se sarà qui oggi o domani. 4. Sederò accanto a te, cara zia? Sì, Maria, siedì là e leggimi ad alta voce. 5. Mio padre è stato ammollato, ma ora può sedere nel giardino ogni giorno. 6. Salva le scale e spegni il gaz nella grande camera. 7. È il fuoco in cucina stato spento? No, signore. 8. Ti darei del danaro se scrivessi questa lettera per me. 9. Questi gatti

appartengono alla mia amica, sono bellissimi. 10. Le appartengono queste rose, signora? Non sono le mie; le tengo per mia sorella. 11. Ami la compagna? Sì, la sua bellezza mi attrae. 12. Il freddo contrae ed il calore dilata.

1. We shall know on Thursday whether my father has arrived in Paris. 2. Understand that I do not allow this noise in the sitting-room. 3. The pupils (*f.*) knew many songs by heart. 4. Will you sit in the garden under the trees? No, thank you; I prefer to sit in the drawing room. 5. My cousins sat behind us at the theatre. 6. Has the lamp been put out in the library? Not yet; but I shall put it out when I have finished my lesson. 7. I think they are putting out the lamp, sir. Then run and tell them not to put it out. 8. This beautiful palace contains many valuable pictures. 9. Shall I hold your gloves? Yes, thank you. 10. I had £5 in my purse when it was stolen. 11. Do you prefer the country to the town? Yes, the beauty of the country attracts me. 12. The horse has drawn this heavy load for a mile.

Udire, to hear. The only irregularity of this verb is that the *u* is changed into *o* whenever the stress falls on the first syllable.

Pres. Ind., odo, odi, ode, ódono. *Fut.*, udrò, etc. *Conditional*, udrei, etc. *Pres. Subj.*, oda, oda, oda, ódano. *Imper.*, odi.

Uscire, to go out. The only irregularity of this verb is that the *u* is changed to *e* whenever the stress falls on the first syllable.

Pres. Ind., esco, esci, esce, ésono. *Pres. Subj.*, esca, esca, esca, écano. *Imper.*, esci.

Valere, to be worth. *Pres. Ind.*, valgo, vagliamo, válgono or vágliono. *Past Def.*, valse, valse, vásero. *Fut.*, warrò, etc. *Conditional*, varrei, etc. *Pres. Subj.*, valgò, or vaglia, etc., vagliamo, vagliate, vágliano or válgano. *Imper.*, valso.

Vedere, to see. *Pres. Ind.*, vedo; veggo or veggio, ve', veggiamo; veggono or veggiono. *Past Def.*, vidi, vide, videro. *Fut.*, vedrò, etc. *Conditional*, vedrei, etc. *Pres. Subj.*, veda, vegga or veggia, etc., veggiamo, veggiate, veggano or veggiano. *Imper.*, vedi or ve'. *Gerund*, vedendo, veggendo. *Past Par.*, veduto, visto.

Venire, to come. *Pres. Ind.*, vengo, vieni, viene, vengono. *Past Def.*, venni, venne, vennero. *Fut.*, verrò, etc. *Conditional*, verrei, etc. *Pres. Subj.*, venga, venga, venga, vengano. *Pres. Part.*, vegnente. *Imper.*, vieni. *Past Part.*, venuto.

Volere, to be willing. *Pres. Ind.*, voglio or vo', vuoi, vuole, vogliamo, vogliono. *Past Def.*, volli, volle, vollero. *Fut.*, vorrò, etc. *Conditional*, vorrei, etc. *Pres. Subj.*, voglia, etc. *No Imperative*.

la musica, the music.

desiderare, to wish.

prevedere, to foresee.

aspettare, to wait for.

adesso, now.

mettere alla posta, to post.

probabilmente, probably.

il limone, the lemon.

riuscire, to go out again.

sorvenire, to help.

spesso, often.

industrioso, industrious.

fino a tanto che, until.

comunque siasi, at any rate.

LV.

1. Le mie sorelle udranno assai bella musica se andranno in Italia.
2. Non desidero udire questa canzone, Maria; l'ho udito spesso e non l'amo molto.
3. Sei troppo stanca, carina? No, posso riuscire, grazie. Io desidero un libro dalla libreria.
4. Se esco comprerò dei fiori nel mercato.
5. Questi guanti valgono bene le cinque lire, che li pagai. Non so, ma lo spero.
6. Il mio orologio valeva venti lire sterline quando lo comprai.
7. Nessuno portrebbe prevedere una tale disgrazia.
8. Mio zio è vecchio e non ci vede bene.
9. Lo sovverrei se fosse

industrioso, ma è ozioso. 10. Maria, verrai meco alla chiesa stamattina? 11. Non credo che mia cugina voglia andare al teatro con mia madre. 12. Se il ragazzo avesse voluto seguire il mio consiglio, non avrebbe perduto il denaro.

1. Did you hear my sister's song? Yes; but I should have heard it better in the next room. 2. Have you heard the new prima donna? Yes, I heard her at a concert last week; but I have not yet been to the opera. 3. I am going out, Julia; remain at home till I return. 4. Go out at once, John, and post this letter. 5. My carriage is not worth as much as yours. No; but your new horse is worth more than ours. 6. These cherries would be worth more if they were fresh. 7. I shall see you to-morrow, I hope, John. Probably; at any rate you will see my mother and sisters. 8. Have you seen many countries? I have seen Italy, France, Spain, and England. 9. My brother has not yet come; I hoped he would have arrived before us. 10. I shall come with you to the market, Mary. 11. Do you wish to buy these apples? No; I wish some pears and some lemons. 12. My cousins (f.) were not willing to wait for us at Rome.

la tentazione, the temptation.

il secolo, the century.

il giudice, the judge.

l'onore, the honour.

la proprietà, the property.

il contenuto, the contents.

il sapore, the savour.

commettere, to commit.

dimettere, to dismiss.

permettere, to permit.

rimettere, to remit.

sommettere, to submit.

tranquillamente, quietly.

innocente, innocent.

con gentilezza, kindly.

piacevole, pleasant.

il latrocinio, the theft.

il debito, the debt.

la disciplina, the discipline.

il piatto, the dish.

la lite, the suit.

ammettere, to admit.

compromettere, to compromise.

omettere, to omit.

promettere, to promise.

scommettere, to bet.

trasmettere, to transmit.

severamente, severely.

inonesta, dishonest.

LVI.

1. Ammetto che l'uomo aveva torto, ma aveva avuto grande tentazione. 2. Il prigioniero non si sommise alla

sua punizione tranquillamente. 3. Questa storia è stata trasmessa per molti secoli. 4. Padre mio, mi permetterai di andare al teatro questa sera? 5. Il ragazzo ha commesso un errore, sarà punito severamente. 6. Il giudice dimise il prigioniero perchè era innocente. 7. Io omisi darle il libro avanti di uscire. 8. Che cosa ha mio padre scommesso? Egli non ha scommesso nulla. 9. Ho ammesso il mio debito. 10. L'uomo ha compromesso il suo onore. 11. Dov' è il mio cappello? Io lo misi sulla tavola in questa camera. 12. Dismettemmo la nostra serva la settimana scorsa, era inonesta.

1. He admitted that he had not paid the money he had promised. 2. I have been told that you did not submit to the school discipline, John. 3. This property has been transmitted from father to son. 4. You kindly permitted me to read in your library, sir. 5. You committed a great fault in taking those cherries. 6. We dismissed our servant (*f.*) because she was disobedient. 7. They (*m.*) did not see the Vatican before leaving Rome. 8. George bet me three pairs of gloves. 9. I remitted £5 at once. 10. The contents of that dish emit a pleasant savour. 11. The box was placed on the table. 12. I have compromised the suit for £2000.

il quadro, the painting.

il vento, the wind.

il suddito, the subject of a sovereign.

il soggetto, the subject (abstract).

l'uscio, the door.

il cancello, the gate.

i mobili, the furniture.

coraggiosamente, bravely.

dipingere, to paint.

ardere, to burn.

convincere, to convince.

discutere, to discuss.

percuotere, to beat.

commuovere, to touch the feelings.

aiutare, to help.

il tappeto, the carpet.

la palla a corda, tennis.

il pratellino, the lawn.

bellamente, nicely.

avveduto, provident.

a cagione di, because of, by reason of.

compiangere, to pity.

estinguere, to extinguish.

svellere, to uproot.

opprimere, to oppress.

affiggere, to affix.

muovere, to move.

LVII.

1. Chi ha dipinto questo bel quadro? Mia sorella, ella dipinge bellamente, signore. 2. Noi compiangemmo la ragazza quando ebbe quella grande disgrazia tre anni fa. 3. Il libro sarebbe stato arso, se il servo non avesse estinto il fuoco subito. 4. Io lo convinsi della sua colpa. 5. Dopo che il figlio ebbe parlato, suo padre soggiunse poche parole. 6. Il vento svelse molti alberi nel parco del re. 7. Discuteremo il soggetto con nostra madre, ella è sempre avveduta e generalmente ha ragione. 8. Il re oppresse i suoi sudditi. 9. Ha la serva battuto il tappeto? Sì lo battè stamattina. 10. I ragazzi affissero questa notizia sull'uscio del teatro. 11. La sua storia mi ha molto commosso. 12. Ieri muovemmo la tavola nella camera prossima.

1. These pictures were painted at Rome, those at Florence. 2. She will be pitied by all her friends because of her misfortune. 3. You extinguished the fire very bravely. 4. They are convinced that their servants are honest. 5. They added that the day was too warm for tennis. 6. The gardener uprooted the tree in the garden near the gate. 7. They discussed the subject before they asked advice. 8. The notice was affixed to the door. 9. Always help those who are oppressed. 10. The servant beat the carpet on the lawn before the house. 11. The story of their misfortunes touched me. 12. All the furniture will be moved next week.

la memoria, the memory.
il cane idrófobo, the mad dog.
la rendita, the income.
il coperchio, the cover.
l'agnello, the lamb.
il monumento, the monument.
tradurre, to translate.
prediligere, to cherish.
proteggere, to protect.
creocere, to grow.
accrescere, to increase.
distruggere, to destroy.
Le chiedo perdono, I beg your
 pardon.
da . . . in qua, since.

appena che, as soon as.
la statua, the statue.
il gioiello, the jewel.
la página, the page.
il nome, the name.
la quistione, the question.
produrre, to produce.
configgere, to nail down.
erèggere, to erect.
riconoscere, to recognise.
governare, to govern.
rincrescere, to regret.
essere dispiacente, to be sorry.
débole, weak.
però, however.

dovunque, everywhere.

LVIII.

1. Ho tradotto tutti gli esercizi ed anche ho scritto una lettera a mia cugina. 2. Ha sempre prediletto la memoria della sua cara amica Maria. 3. I ragazzi produssero le mele che avevano rubato. 4. L'uomo non ha ancora messo il tappeto. 5. Fu la ragazza salvata dal cane idrofobo? Sì, mio cugino la protesse. 6. Chi eresse quella statua al re? La regina. 7. Mia figlia è cresciuta molto dall'anno ultimo in qua. 8. Riconobbe suo fratello? No, è tanto tempo che non lo ha veduto. 9. La mia rendita si accrebbe grandemente l'anno scorso. 10. Hai letto questo libro? Sì, l'amo molto. 11. Furono i ragazzi cattivi ieri? Sì, ma loro rincrebbe la loro colpa subito. 12. Hai distrutto la lettera di mia madre? Sì, la distrussi appena che la ricevei.

1. Have you translated the fiftieth exercise? No; I have read ten pages of my book and written a letter this morning. 2. She cherished that little lamb for a long time. 3. The policeman produced the jewels that had been lost. 4. They have not nailed down the cover of that large box. 5. In a well-governed country the weak are protected. 6. They inscribed the name of that great man on the monument erected to his memory. 7. I did not recognise your son; he has grown since I last saw him. 8. I should, however, have recognised his cousin anywhere. 9. My father's income is greatly increased. 10. I mistook this hat for mine; I beg your pardon, sir. 11. They regretted that the matter had been discussed. 12. I am sorry that you have destroyed that letter.

il disonore, the disgrace.

la generosità, the generosity.

l'amore, the love.

la società, the society.

il vetro, the pane of glass.

espellere, to expel.

repellere, to repulse.

rompere, to break.

corrompere, to corrupt.

mandar via, to dismiss.

su, on, upon, up.

il campo, the camp.

il sasso, the stone.

la padrona, the mistress.

impellere, to excite.

predare, to take, to capture.

dirompere, to rush out.

condurre, to lead.

scoppiare, to burst.

LIX.

1. Che disonore. Mia sorella è stata espulsa dalla scuola.
 2. Chi l'espulse? Il suo maestro francese. 3. Questa storia m'impelle a buone azioni. 4. I nemici furono ripulsi cinque volte dal fortino. 5. La sua generosità ha impulsato la mia anche. 6. I nemici repulsero i nostri soldati, e preदारono il campo. 7. Ho rotto il mio ombrello; puoi prestarmi il tuo? 8. Noi dirompemmo dal teatro quando scoppiò l'incendio. 9. Se fossimo suoi amici egli ci farebbe belli regali. 10. Il ragazzo ha rotto il vetro, sarà punito. 11. Come lo ruppe? Con un sasso. 12. È il bastone di mio zio rotto? Sì, è stato rotto dal servo.

1. That boy was expelled from school last week. Who expelled him? The new master? 2. The love of our country excites us to fight. 3. The brave soldiers repulsed the enemy. 4. I have heard that they were almost repulsed before the final attack. 5. The general led them bravely up the hill, and they gained the victory. 6. This book excites all who read it to great deeds. 7. That careless servant (*f.*) has broken three plates and two glasses. 8. The children rushed out of the school when the lessons were finished. 9. That boy was in the society of bad companions. 10. I went out to-day, but the wind was so strong that it broke my umbrella. 11. The pupil (*m.*) was disobedient to the master, and also broke several panes of glass. 12. Where is the servant? Her mistress has dismissed her.

qualcuno, somebody.
il mezzo, the means, resource.
l'opinione, the opinion.
la pazienza, the patience.
sciogliere il problema, to solve the problem.
chiedere, to ask.
rispondere, to reply.
accompagnare, to accompany.
esaurire, to exhaust.
persistere, to persist.

solvere, to solve.
resistere, to resist.
il ditale, the thimble.
il cimitero, the cemetery.
la sala, the hall.
corrispondere, to correspond.
scusare, to excuse.
assistere, to assist.
seppellire, to bury.
risolvere, to resolve.
grato, grateful.

apertamente, openly.

LX.

1. Corrispondi molto con la tua amica? Sì, le scrivo una volta ogni settimana. 2. Hai chiesto alla serva dov'è il mio libro? Sì, è nella sala. 3. Qualcuno ha nascosto il mio cappello, non è qui. 4. Io non ho ancora risposto alla lettera di mio padre, spero che mi scuserà del ritardo. 5. Il padre chiese al figlio di accompagnarlo al museo. 6. Dov'è nascosto il ditale? È sotto quel libro. 7. Ho assistito il ragazzo nel suo lavoro ed egli è molto grato. 8. L'uomo ha esaurito tutti i suoi mezzi ora. 9. La zia morì la settimana ultima e fu sepolta al cimitero dirimpetto alla chiesa. 10. Ho persistito nella mia propria opinione, perchè so di avere ragione. 11. Hanno risoluto di andare a Londra. 12. Noi non avremmo mai soluto quella quistione.

1. Do you correspond with your cousin Emma? I corresponded with her last year. 2. Have you asked John where my hat is? Yes, I asked him this morning, and I asked him again this evening. 3. I put my stick in the hall, but I think some one has hidden it. 4. My sister did not reply to the last letter I wrote her. 5. Have you answered my uncle's letter? 6. What did the master ask you? He asked me if I had finished my exercise. 7. I have assisted them and have often lent them money. 8. I have exhausted my patience now. 9. The boy has resisted me openly; I must expel him from the school. 10. Why have you persisted in your disobedience? 11. Because I have resolved to go to London. 12. John is the only boy in the school who has solved that problem.

* N.B.—The greatest number of the following Verbs are Irregular only in the First and Third Person Singular and in the Third Person Plural of the Past Definite, and in the Past Participle.

INFINITIVE.	PAST			
	PRESENT.	DEFINITE.	FUTURE.	PARTICIPLE.
<i>†accadere</i> , to happen.	<i>accade</i>	<i>accadde</i>	<i>accadrà</i>	<i>accaduto.</i>
<i>accendere</i> , to light.	...	<i>accesi</i>	...	<i>acceso.</i>
<i>accingersi</i> , to prepare one's self.	...	<i>mi accinsi</i>	...	<i>accintosi.</i>

INFINITIVE.	PRESENT.	DEFINITE.	FUTURE.	PARTICIPLE.
<i>accludere</i> , to enclose.	...	<i>acclusi</i>	...	<i>accluso.</i>
<i>accogliere</i> , to welcome.	<i>accolgo</i>	<i>accolsi</i>	<i>accoglierò</i>	<i>accolto.</i>
<i>accorrere</i> , to run to.	...	<i>accorsi</i>	...	<i>accorso.</i>
<i>accorgersi</i> , to perceive.	...	<i>m'accorsi</i>	...	<i>accortosi.</i>
<i>accrescere</i> , to increase.	...	<i>accrebbi</i>	...	<i>accreciuto.</i>
<i>addurre</i> , to bring.	<i>adduco</i>	<i>addussi</i>	...	<i>addotto.</i>
<i>affiggere</i> , to affix.	...	<i>affissi</i>	...	<i>affisso.</i>
<i>affliggere</i> , to afflict.	...	<i>afflissi</i>	...	<i>afflitto.</i>
<i>affrangere</i> , to wear out.	...	<i>affransi</i>	...	<i>affranto.</i>
<i>aggiungere</i> , to add.	...	<i>aggiunsi</i>	...	<i>aggiunto.</i>
<i>†algere</i> , to freeze.	...	<i>alsi, alse</i>	...	{ Part. Pres. <i>algente</i>
<i>alludere</i> , to allude.	...	<i>allusi</i>	...	<i>alluso.</i>
<i>ammettere</i> , to admit.	...	<i>ammisi</i>	...	<i>ammesso.</i>
<i>ancidere</i> , to kill.	...	<i>ancisi</i>	...	<i>anciso.</i>
<i>andare</i> , to go.	<i>vo, vado</i>	...	<i>andrò</i>	...
<i>†angere</i> , to torment.	<i>ange</i>	...	...	...
<i>annettere</i> , to annex.	...	...	...	<i>annesso.</i>
<i>antivenire</i> , to forestall.	<i>antivengo</i>	<i>antivenni</i>	<i>antiverrò</i>	<i>antivenuto.</i>
<i>apparire</i> , to appear.	<i>apparisco</i>	<i>apparui</i>	...	<i>apparso.</i>
<i>appartenere</i> , to belong.	<i>apparten- tengo</i>	<i>appar- tenni</i>	<i>appar- terrò</i>	...
<i>aprire</i> , to open.	...	...	...	<i>aperto.</i>
<i>ardere</i> , to burn.	...	<i>arsi</i>	...	<i>arso.</i>
<i>†arrògere</i> , to add.	<i>arroge</i>	<i>arrosi</i>	...	<i>arroso.</i>
<i>ascendere</i> , to ascend.	...	<i>ascesi</i>	...	<i>asceso.</i>
<i>ascondere</i> , to hide.	...	<i>ascosi</i>	...	<i>ascoso.</i>
<i>ascrivere</i> , to ascribe.	...	<i>ascrissi</i>	...	<i>ascritto.</i>
<i>assalire</i> , to attack.	<i>assalgo</i>	<i>assalsi, assalii</i>	...	...
<i>assistere</i> , to assist.	...	...	...	<i>assistito.</i>
<i>assolvere</i> , to absolve.	...	...	...	<i>assolto.</i>
<i>assorgere</i> , to rise.	...	<i>assorsi</i>	...	<i>assorto.</i>
<i>assuefare</i> , to accustom.	<i>assuefac- cio, assuefò</i>	<i>assuefeci</i>	<i>assuefarò</i>	<i>assuefatto.</i>
<i>assumere</i> , to assume.	...	<i>assunsi</i>	...	<i>assunto.</i>
<i>astenersi</i> , to abstain.	<i>m'astengo</i>	<i>m'astenni</i>	<i>m'asterro</i>	<i>astenutosi.</i>
<i>astèrgere</i> , to cleanse.	...	<i>astersi</i>	...	<i>asterso.</i>
<i>astringere</i> , to compel.	...	<i>astrinisi</i>	...	<i>astretto.</i>
<i>attendere</i> , to wait.	...	<i>attesi</i>	...	<i>atteso.</i>
<i>attenere</i> , to pertain.	<i>attengo</i>	<i>attenni</i>	<i>atterro</i>	...
<i>attingere</i> , to attain.	...	<i>attinsi</i>	...	<i>attinto.</i>
<i>attrarre</i> , to attract.	<i>attraggo</i>	<i>attrassi</i>	<i>attrarrò</i>	<i>attratto.</i>
<i>†avèllere</i> , to draw out.	...	<i>avulsi</i>	...	<i>avulso.</i>

INFINITIVE.	PRESENT.	DEFINITE.	FUTURE.	PARTICIPLE.
<i>avere</i> , to have.	<i>ho</i>	<i>ebbi</i>	<i>avrò</i>	<i>avuto.</i>
<i>avvedersi</i> , to become aware.	...	<i>m'avvidi</i>	<i>m'avvedrà</i>	...
<i>†avvenire</i> , to happen.	<i>avviene</i>	<i>avvenne</i>	<i>avverrà</i>	<i>avvenuto.</i>
<i>avvincere</i> , to tighten round.	...	<i>avvinsi</i>	...	<i>avvinto.</i>
<i>avvolgere</i> , to involve.	...	<i>avvolsi</i>	...	<i>avvolto.</i>
<i>benedire</i> , to bless.	<i>benedico</i>	<i>benedissi</i>	...	<i>benedetto.</i>
<i>bere</i> , to drink.	<i>bevo</i>	<i>bevvi</i>	...	<i>bevuto.</i>
<i>bevere</i> , to drink.	...	<i>bevvi,</i> <i>bevei</i>	...	...
<i>cadere</i> , to fall.	...	<i>caddi</i>	<i>cadrò</i>	...
<i>†calere</i> , to be important.	<i>cale</i>	<i>calse</i>	<i>calerà</i>	...
<i>†cogliere</i> , to hold.	<i>cape</i>	...	...	...
<i>chiedere</i> , to ask.	<i>chiedo,</i> <i>chiedo</i>	<i>chiesi</i>	...	<i>chiesto.</i>
<i>chiudere</i> , to shut.	...	<i>chiusi</i>	...	<i>chiuso.</i>
<i>cingere</i> , <i>cingere</i> , to gird.	...	<i>cinsi</i>	...	<i>cinto.</i>
<i>*circonflettere</i> , to bend round.	...	...	...	<i>circonflesso</i>
<i>circonfondere</i> , to confuse.	...	<i>circonfusi</i>	...	<i>circonfuso.</i>
<i>coesistere</i> , to coexist.	...	...	...	<i>coesistito.</i>
<i>cogliere</i> , to gather.	<i>colgo</i>	<i>colsi</i>	<i>coglierò,</i> <i>corrò</i>	<i>colto.</i>
<i>coincidere</i> , to concur.	...	<i>coincisi</i>	...	<i>coinciso.</i>
<i>†colere</i> , to worship.	<i>colo, cole</i>	...	...	...
<i>commettere</i> , to commit.	...	<i>commisi</i>	...	<i>commesso.</i>
<i>commuovere</i> , to move.	...	<i>commossi</i>	...	<i>commosso.</i>
<i>comparire</i> , to appear.	<i>comparisco</i>	<i>comparvi</i> <i>comparsi</i> <i>comparii</i>	...	<i>comparso.</i> <i>comparito.</i>
<i>compellere</i>.	...	<i>compulsi</i>	...	<i>compulso.</i>
<i>compiangere</i> , to pity.	...	<i>compiansi</i>	...	<i>compianto.</i>
<i>comporre</i> , to compose.	<i>compongo</i>	<i>composi</i>	<i>comporrò</i>	<i>composto.</i>
<i>comprimere</i> , to compress.	...	<i>compressi</i>	...	<i>compresso.</i>
<i>compromettere</i> , to compromise.	...	<i>compromisi</i>	...	<i>compromesso.</i>
<i>compungere</i> , to regret.	...	<i>compunsi</i>	...	<i>compunto.</i>
<i>concedere</i> , to grant.	...	<i>concessi</i>	...	<i>concesso.</i>
<i>concepire</i> , to conceive.	<i>concepisco</i>	...	...	<i>concepito,</i> <i>concepito.</i>
<i>condolere</i> , to condole.	<i>condolgo</i>	<i>condolsi</i>	<i>condorrò</i>	...
<i>condurre</i> , to lead.	<i>conduco</i>	<i>condussi</i>	...	<i>condotto.</i>

INFINITIVE.	PRESENT.	DEFINITE.	FUTURE.	PARTICIPLE.
† <i>conficere</i> , to con- crate.	<i>confetto.</i>
<i>configgere</i> , to nail.	...	<i>confissi</i>	...	<i>confitto.</i>
<i>confondere</i> , to confound.	...	<i>confusi</i>	...	<i>confuso.</i>
<i>congiungere</i> , to join.	...	<i>congiunti</i>	...	<i>congiunto.</i>
<i>connettere</i> , to connect.	<i>connesso.</i>
<i>conoscere</i> , to know.	...	<i>conobbi</i>	...	<i>conosciuto.</i>
<i>conquidere</i> , to conquer.	<i>conquiso.</i>
<i>consistere</i> , to consist.	<i>consistito.</i>
<i>consumere</i> , to consume.	...	<i>consumsi</i>	...	<i>consumto.</i>
<i>contendere</i> , to dispute.	...	<i>contesi</i>	...	<i>conteso.</i>
<i>contenere</i> , to contain.	<i>contengo</i>	<i>cotenni</i>	<i>conterrò</i>	...
* <i>contessere</i> , to weave.	<i>contesto.</i>
<i>contorcere</i> , to twist.	...	<i>contorsi</i>	...	<i>contorto.</i>
<i>contradire</i> , to contradict.	<i>contradico</i>	<i>contradissi</i>	...	<i>contradetto.</i>
<i>contradistinguere</i> , to dis- tinguish.	...	<i>contradis- tinsi</i>	...	<i>contradis- tinto.</i>
<i>contraffare</i> , to imitate.	<i>contraffac- cio, con- traffac-</i>	<i>traffeci</i>	<i>contraffarò</i>	<i>contraffatto.</i>
<i>contrarre</i> , to contract.	<i>contraggo</i>	<i>contrassi</i>	...	<i>contratto.</i>
<i>controvertere</i> , to contro- vert.	<i>controver- tito.</i>
<i>contundere</i> , to bruise.	...	<i>contusi</i>	...	<i>contuso.</i>
<i>convenire</i> , to agree.	<i>convengo</i>	<i>convenni</i>	<i>converrò</i>	<i>convenuto.</i>
<i>convergere</i> , to converge.	<i>converso.</i>
<i>convincere</i> , to persuade.	...	<i>convinsi</i>	...	<i>convinto.</i>
<i>coprire</i> , to cover.	<i>coperto.</i>
<i>correggere</i> , to correct.	...	<i>corressi</i>	...	<i>corretto.</i>
<i>correre</i> , to run.	...	<i>corsi</i>	...	<i>corso.</i>
<i>corrispondere</i> , to corre- spond.	...	<i>corrisposi</i>	...	<i>corrisposto.</i>
<i>corròdere</i> , to corrode.	...	<i>corrosi</i>	...	<i>corroso.</i>
<i>corròmpere</i> , to corrupt.	...	<i>corruppi</i>	...	<i>corrotto.</i>
<i>coscrivere</i> , to enrol.	...	<i>coscrissi</i>	...	<i>coscritto.</i>
<i>costringere</i> , to compel.	...	<i>costrinsi</i>	...	<i>costretto.</i>
<i>costruire</i> , to construct.	<i>costruisco</i>	<i>costrussi</i>	<i>costrurrò, costruito. costruirò</i>	
<i>creocere</i> , to grow.	...	<i>crebbi</i>	...	<i>cresciuto.</i>
<i>crocifiggere</i> , to crucify.	...	<i>crocifissi</i>	...	{ <i>crocifisso. crocifitto.</i>
<i>cuocere</i> , to cook.	...	<i>cossi</i>	<i>cocerò</i>	<i>cotto.</i>
<i>dare</i> , to give.	<i>do</i>	<i>diedi</i>	<i>dardò</i>	...
<i>decadere</i> , to decay.	...	<i>decaddi</i>	<i>decadrò</i>	...
<i>decreocere</i> , to decrease.	...	<i>decrebbi</i>	...	<i>decresciuto.</i>

INFINITIVE.	PRESENT.	DEFINITE.	FUTURE.	PARTICIPLE. PAST
<i>dedurre</i> , to deduct.	<i>deduco</i>	<i>dedussi</i>	...	<i>dedotto</i> .
<i>delinquere</i> , to offend.	...	...	...	<i>delinquito</i> .
<i>deludere</i> , to delude.	...	<i>delusi</i>	...	<i>deluso</i> .
<i>deporre</i> , to depose.	<i>depongo</i>	<i>deposi</i>	...	<i>deposto</i> .
<i>deprimere</i> , to depress.	...	<i>depressi</i>	...	<i>depresso</i> .
<i>desistere</i> , to desist.	...	...	...	<i>desistito</i> .
<i>desumere</i> , to assume, to conclude.	...	<i>desunsi</i>	...	<i>desunto</i> .
<i>detenere</i> , to detain.	<i>detengo</i>	<i>detenni</i>	<i>deterro</i>	...
<i>detrarre</i> , to detract.	<i>detraggo</i>	<i>detrassi</i>	...	<i>detratto</i> .
<i>devolvere</i> , to devolve.	...	...	...	<i>devoluto</i> .
<i>difendere</i> , to defend.	...	<i>difesi</i>	...	<i>difeso</i> .
<i>diffondere</i> , to expand.	...	<i>diffusi</i>	...	<i>diffuso</i> .
<i>dimettere</i> , to dismiss.	...	<i>dimisi</i>	...	<i>dimesso</i> .
<i>dipingere</i> , to paint.	...	<i>dipinsi</i>	...	<i>dipinto</i> .
<i>dire</i> , to say.	<i>dico</i>	<i>dissi</i>	...	<i>detto</i> .
<i>dirigere</i> , to direct.	...	<i>diressi</i>	...	<i>diretto</i> .
<i>dirimere</i> , to annul.	...	...	...	...
<i>dirompere</i> , to rush out.	...	<i>diruppi</i>	...	<i>dirotto</i> .
<i>discendere</i> , to descend.	...	<i>discesi</i>	...	<i>disceso</i> .
<i>discingere</i> , to ungird.	...	<i>discinsi</i>	...	<i>discinto</i> .
<i>disciogliere</i> , to untie.	<i>disciolgo</i>	<i>disciolsi</i>	<i>disciorrò</i> , <i>discioglierò</i>	<i>disciolto</i> .
<i>discorrere</i> , to discourse.	...	<i>discorsi</i>	...	<i>discorso</i> .
<i>discutere</i> , to discuss.	...	<i>discussi</i>	...	<i>discusso</i> .
<i>disdire</i> , to deny, to re- fuse.	<i>disdico</i>	<i>disdissi</i>	...	<i>disdetto</i> .
<i>disfare</i> , to undo.	<i>disfaccio</i> , <i>disfò</i>	<i>disfeci</i>	<i>disfarò</i>	<i>disfatto</i> .
<i>disgiungere</i> , to disjoin.	...	<i>disgiunsi</i>	...	<i>disgiunto</i> .
<i>disinvolgere</i> , to unravel.	...	<i>disinvolsi</i>	...	<i>disinvolto</i> .
<i>dismettere</i> , to dismiss, lapse.	...	<i>dimisi</i>	...	<i>dimesso</i> .
<i>dispérgere</i> , to disperse.	...	<i>dispersi</i>	...	<i>disperso</i> .
<i>disporre</i> , to dispose.	<i>dispongo</i>	<i>disposi</i>	...	<i>disposto</i> .
<i>dissolvere</i> , to dissolve.	...	...	...	<i>dissoluto</i> .
<i>dissuadere</i> , to dissuade.	...	<i>dissuasi</i>	...	<i>dissuaso</i> .
<i>distendere</i> , to extend.	...	<i>distesi</i>	...	<i>disteso</i> .
<i>distinguere</i> , to distin- guish.	...	<i>distinsi</i>	...	<i>distinto</i> .
<i>distogliere</i> , to distract.	<i>distolgo</i>	<i>distolsi</i>	<i>distogliero</i> , <i>distorò</i>	<i>distolto</i> .
<i>distorcere</i> , to twist, to distort.	...	<i>distorsi</i>	...	<i>distorto</i> .
<i>distrarre</i> , to distract.	<i>distruggo</i>	<i>distrassi</i>	...	<i>distratto</i> .

INFINITIVE.	PRESENT.	DEFINITE.	FUTURE.	PAST PARTICIPLE.
<i>distruggere</i> , to destroy.	...	<i>distrussi</i>	...	<i>distrutto</i> .
<i>distruggere</i> , to take off stains of grease.	...	<i>disunsi</i>	...	<i>disunto</i> .
<i>disvellere</i> , to uproot.	<i>disvello</i> , <i>disvelgo</i>	<i>disvelsi</i>	<i>disvellerò</i> ,	<i>disvelto</i> .
<i>disvolere</i> , to become unwilling.	<i>disvoglio</i>	<i>disvolli</i>	<i>disvorro</i>	...
<i>divellere</i> , to root up.	...	<i>divelsi</i>	...	<i>divolto</i> .
<i>divenire</i> , to become.	<i>divengo</i>	<i>divenni</i>	<i>diverrò</i>	<i>divenuto</i> .
‡ <i>divergere</i> , to diverge.	...	...	...	<i>divergente</i> (pr. p.).
‡ <i>divedere</i> , to give to understand.				
<i>dividere</i> , to divide.	...	<i>divisi</i>	...	<i>diviso</i> .
<i>divolgere</i> , } to unfold.	...	<i>divolsi</i>	...	<i>divolto</i> .
<i>disvolgere</i> , }				
<i>dolere</i> , to ache.	<i>dolgo</i>	<i>dolsi</i>	<i>dorrò</i>	...
<i>dovere</i> , to be obliged.	{ <i>devo</i> <i>debbo</i> <i>deggio</i>	<i>dovei</i> , <i>dovetti</i>	<i>dovrò</i>	...
<i>effondere</i> , to overflow.	...	<i>effusi</i>	...	<i>effuso</i> .
<i>eleggere</i> , to elect.	...	<i>elessi</i>	...	<i>eletto</i> .
<i>elidere</i> , to elide.	...	<i>elisi</i>	...	<i>eliso</i> .
<i>eludere</i> , to elude.	...	<i>elusi</i>	...	<i>eluso</i> .
<i>emettere</i> , to emit.	...	<i>emisi</i>	...	<i>emesso</i> .
<i>emergere</i> , to emerge.	...	<i>emersi</i>	...	<i>emerso</i> .
<i>erigere</i> , to erect, to set up.	<i>erigo</i> , <i>ergo</i>	<i>eressi</i> , <i>ersi</i>	<i>erigerò</i> , <i>ergerò</i>	<i>eretto</i> .
<i>erompere</i> , to break out.	...	<i>eruppi</i>	...	<i>erotto</i> .
<i>esaurire</i> , to exhaust.	<i>esaurisco</i>	...	...	<i>esaurito</i> , <i>esauito</i> .
<i>escludere</i> , to exclude.	...	<i>esclusi</i>	...	<i>escluso</i> .
<i>esigere</i> , to exact.	...	<i>esigei</i> , <i>esigetti</i>	...	<i>esatto</i> .
‡ <i>esimere</i> , to exempt.	...	...	...	<i>esente</i> (pr. p.).
<i>esistere</i> , to exist.	...	...	...	<i>esistito</i> .
<i>espellere</i> , to expel.	...	<i>espulsi</i>	...	<i>espulso</i> .
<i>esplodere</i> , to explode.	...	<i>esplosi</i>	...	<i>esploso</i> .
<i>esporre</i> , to expose.	<i>espongo</i>	<i>esposi</i>	<i>esporrò</i>	<i>esposto</i> .
<i>esprimere</i> , to express.	...	<i>espressi</i>	...	<i>espresso</i> .
<i>espungere</i> , to expunge.	...	<i>espunsi</i>	...	<i>espunto</i> .
<i>essere</i> , to be.	<i>sono</i>	<i>fui</i>	<i>sarò</i>	<i>stato</i> .
<i>estendere</i> , to extend.	...	<i>estesi</i>	...	<i>esteso</i> .
<i>estinguere</i> , to extinguish.	...	<i>estinsi</i>	...	<i>estinto</i> .

INFINITIVE.	PRESENT.	DEFINITE.	FUTURE.	PAST PARTICIPLE.
<i>estollere</i> , to extol.	<i>estolgo</i>	<i>estolsi</i>	...	<i>estolto</i> .
<i>estorcere</i> , to extort.	...	<i>estorsi</i>	...	<i>estorto</i> .
<i>estrarre</i> , to extract.	<i>estraggo</i>	<i>estrassi</i>	...	<i>stratto</i> .
<i>fare</i> , to do, to make.	<i>fo, faccio</i>	<i>feci</i>	<i>farò</i>	<i>fatto</i> .
<i> fendere</i> , to split.	...	...	...	<i>fesso</i> .
<i>†fervere</i> , to burn.	...	...	...	<i>fervente</i> (pr. p.).
<i>figgere</i> , to fix.	...	<i>fissi</i>	...	<i>fisso, fitto</i> .
<i> fingere</i> , to feign.	...	<i>finsi</i>	...	<i>finto</i> .
<i> fondere</i> , to melt.	...	<i>fusi</i>	...	<i>fuso</i> .
<i>frangere</i> , to break.	...	<i>fransi</i>	...	<i>franto</i> .
<i>frapporre</i> , to put between.	<i>frappongo</i>	<i>frapposi</i>	...	<i>frapposto</i> .
<i>friggere</i> , to fry.	...	<i>frissi</i>	...	<i>fritto</i> .
<i>†fulgere</i> , to shine.	...	...	...	<i>fulgente</i> (pr. p.).
<i>*genusflettere</i> , to kneel down.	...	...	...	<i>genusflesso</i> .
<i>giacere</i> , to lie down.	<i>giaccio</i>	<i>giacqui</i>	...	<i>giaciuto</i> .
<i>†gire</i> , to go.	<i>gite</i>	<i>gisti, gè</i>	...	<i>gito</i> .
<i>giungere, giugnere</i> , to arrive.	...	<i>giunsi</i>	...	<i>giunto</i> .
<i>illudere</i> , to illude.	...	<i>illusi</i>	...	<i>illuso</i> .
<i>immèrgere</i> , to immerse.	...	<i>immersi</i>	...	<i>immerso</i> .
<i>impèllere</i> , to excite.	...	<i>impulsi</i>	...	<i>impulso</i> .
<i>imporre</i> , to impose.	<i>impongo</i>	<i>imposi</i>	...	<i>imposto</i> .
<i>imprèndere</i> , to undertake.	...	<i>impresi</i>	...	<i>impreso</i> .
<i>imprimere</i> , to imprint.	...	<i>impressi</i>	...	<i>impresso</i> .
<i>inchiudere</i> , to enclose.	...	<i>inchiusi</i>	...	<i>inchiuso</i> .
<i>includere</i> , to engrave.	...	<i>incisi</i>	...	<i>inciso</i> .
<i>includere</i> , to include.	...	<i>inclusi</i>	...	<i>incluso</i> .
<i>†incogliere</i> , to happen.	<i>incoglie</i>	<i>incolse</i>	<i>incoglierà, incorrà</i>	<i>incolto</i> .
<i>incorrere</i> , to incur.	...	<i>incorsi</i>	...	<i>incorso</i> .
<i>incrèscere</i> , to grieve.	...	<i>increbbi</i>	...	<i>incresciuto</i> .
<i>incùtere</i> , to instil.	...	<i>incussi</i>	...	<i>incusso</i> .
<i>indùlgere</i> , to indulge.	...	<i>indulsi</i>	...	<i>indulto</i> .
<i>indurre</i> , to induce.	<i>induco</i>	<i>indussi</i>	...	<i>indotto</i> .
<i>†inflcere</i> , to infect.	...	...	...	<i>infetto</i> .
<i>infiggere</i> , to affix.	...	<i>infissi</i>	...	<i>infitto</i> .
<i>inflettere</i> , to bend.	...	...	...	<i>inflesso</i> .
<i>infiggere</i> , to inflict.	...	<i>inflissi</i>	...	<i>inflitto</i> .
<i>infondere</i> , to infuse.	...	<i>infusi</i>	...	<i>infuso</i> .
<i>infrangere</i> , to break.	...	<i>infransi</i>	...	<i>infranto</i> .

INFINITIVE.	PRESENT.	DEFINITE.	FUTURE.	PAST PARTICIPLE.
<i>infringere</i> , to infringe.	...	<i>infrinsi</i>	...	<i>infrinto.</i>
<i>ingiungere</i> , to enjoin.	...	<i>ingiunse</i>	...	<i>ingiunto.</i>
<i>insistere</i> , to insist.	...	...	...	<i>insistito.</i>
<i>insorgere</i> , to revolt.	...	<i>insorsi</i>	...	<i>insorto.</i>
<i>intendere</i> , to intend, to hear, to understand.	...	<i>intesi</i>	...	<i>inteso.</i>
<i>intervenire</i> , to happen, intervene.	<i>inter- vengo</i>	<i>inter- venni</i>	<i>inter- verrò</i>	<i>inter- venuto.</i>
<i>intingere</i> , to dip.	...	<i>intinsi</i>	...	<i>intinto.</i>
<i>intraprendere</i> , to undertake.	...	<i>intrapresi</i>	...	<i>intrapreso.</i>
<i>intravedere</i> , to see dimly.	<i>intrav- veggo</i>	<i>intrav- vidi</i>	<i>intrav- vedrò</i>	...
<i>intravvenire</i> , to happen.	<i>intra- viene</i>	<i>intra- venne</i>	<i>intra- verrà</i>	<i>intra- venuto.</i>
<i>infridere</i> , to crush.	...	<i>intrisi</i>	...	<i>intriso.</i>
<i>introdurre</i> , to introduce.	<i>introduco</i>	<i>introdussi</i>	...	<i>introdotto.</i>
<i>intrudere</i> , to intrude.	...	<i>intrusi</i>	...	<i>intruso.</i>
<i>invadere</i> , to invade.	...	<i>invasi</i>	...	<i>invaso.</i>
<i>invalidere</i> , to prevail.	...	<i>invalidsi</i>	...	<i>invalido.</i>
<i>involvere</i> , to involve.	...	<i>involsi</i>	...	<i>involto.</i>
<i>ire</i> , to go.	<i>ite</i> (2nd p. pl.)	...	<i>iremo</i> (pl. only)	<i>ito.</i>
<i>iscrivere</i> , to inscribe.	...	<i>iscrissi</i>	...	<i>iscritto.</i>
<i>istruire</i> , to instruct.	<i>istruisco</i>	...	...	<i>istrutto.</i>
<i>lédere</i> , to hurt.	...	<i>lesi</i>	...	<i>leso.</i>
<i>leggere</i> , to read.	...	<i>lessi</i>	...	<i>letto.</i>
<i>licere</i> , to be allowed.	<i>lice</i>	...	...	<i>lecito.</i>
<i>lucere</i> , to shine.	...	<i>lussi</i>	...	...
<i>maledire</i> , to curse.	<i>maledico</i>	<i>maledissi</i>	...	<i>maledetto.</i>
<i>mantenere</i> , to maintain.	<i>mantengo</i>	<i>mantenni</i>	<i>manterrò</i>	...
<i>mergere</i> , to dip.	...	<i>mersi</i>	...	<i>merso.</i>
<i>mettere</i> , to put.	...	<i>mi si</i>	...	<i>messo.</i>
<i>mordere</i> , to bite.	...	<i>morsi</i>	...	<i>morso.</i>
<i>morire</i> , to die.	<i>muoio</i>	...	<i>morirò, morrò</i>	<i>morto.</i>
<i>ungere</i> , to milk.	...	<i>munsi</i>	...	<i>munto.</i>
<i>muovere</i> , to move.	...	<i>mossi</i>	...	<i>mosso.</i>
<i>nascere</i> , to be born.	...	<i>nacqui</i>	...	<i>nato.</i>
<i>nascondere</i> , to hide.	...	<i>nascosi</i>	...	<i>nascoso, nascosto.</i>
<i>negligere</i> , to neglect.	...	<i>neglessi</i>	...	<i>negletto.</i>
<i>nettere</i> , to join.	...	<i>nessi</i>	...	<i>nesso.</i>
<i>nuocere</i> , to hurt.	...	<i>nocqui</i>	...	<i>nocuto.</i>
<i>occorrere</i> , to happen.	...	<i>occorse</i>	...	<i>occorso.</i>

INFINITIVE.	PRESENT.	DEFINITE.	FUTURE.	PARTICIPLE.
<i>offendere</i> , to offend.	...	<i>offesi</i>	...	<i>offeso.</i>
<i>offerire</i> , to offer.	<i>offerisco</i>	...	...	<i>offerta.</i>
<i>offrire</i> , to offer.	...	...	...	<i>offerto.</i>
<i>† olire</i> , to be fragrant.	The Imperfect Tense Ind. only.			
<i>omittere</i> , to omit.	...	<i>omisi</i>	...	<i>omesso.</i>
<i>opporre</i> , to oppose.	<i>oppongo</i>	<i>opposti</i>	<i>opporrò</i>	<i>opposto.</i>
<i>opprimere</i> , to oppress.	...	<i>oppressi</i>	...	<i>oppresso.</i>
<i>ottenere</i> , to obtain.	<i>ottengo</i>	<i>ottenni</i>	<i>otterrò</i>	...
<i>† pāndere</i> , to show.	<i>pāndi,</i> <i>pānde</i>	<i>pānda</i>	3 per.	Present Subj.
<i>parere</i> , to seem.	<i>paio</i>	<i>parvi</i>	<i>parrò</i>	<i>paruto,</i> <i>parso.</i>
<i>percipere</i> , to get.	...	...	...	<i>percelto.</i>
<i>percorrere</i> , to traverse.	...	<i>percorsi</i>	...	<i>percorso.</i>
<i>percuotere</i> , to strike.	...	<i>percossi</i>	...	<i>percosso.</i>
<i>† perdere</i> , to lose.	...	<i>persi</i>	...	<i>perso.</i>
<i>permettere</i> , to allow.	...	<i>permisi</i>	...	<i>permesso.</i>
<i>persistere</i> , to persist.	...	...	...	<i>persistito.</i>
<i>persuadere</i> , to convince.	...	<i>persuasi</i>	...	<i>persuas.</i>
<i>pervenire</i> , to succeed.	<i>pervengo</i>	<i>pervenni</i>	<i>perverrò</i>	<i>pervenuto.</i>
<i>piacere</i> , to please.	...	<i>piacqui</i>	...	<i>piaciuto.</i>
<i>piangere</i> , to cry.	...	<i>piansi</i>	...	<i>pianto.</i>
<i>pingere</i> , to paint.	...	<i>pinsi</i>	...	<i>pinto.</i>
<i>† piovere</i> , to rain.	...	<i>piovve</i>	...	...
<i>porgere</i> , to hand.	...	<i>porsi</i>	...	<i>porto.</i>
<i>porre</i> , to put.	<i>pongo</i>	<i>posi</i>	<i>porrò</i>	<i>posto.</i>
<i>possedere</i> , to possess.	{ <i>posseggo</i> <i>possiedo</i>	{ <i>possedei</i> <i>posse-</i> <i>detti</i>	{ <i>posse-</i> <i>derò</i> <i>posse-</i> <i>drò</i>	<i>posseduto.</i>
<i>potere</i> , to be able.	<i>posso</i>	<i>potci</i>	<i>potrò</i>	...
<i>precidere</i> , to cut.	...	<i>precisi</i>	...	<i>preciso.</i>
<i>precludere</i> , to impede.	...	<i>preclusi</i>	...	<i>precluso.</i>
<i>precorrere</i> , to anticipate.	...	<i>precorsi</i>	...	<i>precorso.</i>
<i>prediligere</i> , to cherish.	...	<i>predilessi</i>	...	<i>prediletto.</i>
<i>predire</i> , to foretell.	<i>predico</i>	<i>predissi</i>	...	<i>predetto.</i>
<i>predispore</i> , to predis-	<i>predis-</i>	...	<i>predis-</i>	<i>predis-</i>
<i>pose.</i>	<i>pongo</i>	<i>predisposi</i>	<i>porrò</i>	<i>posto.</i>
<i>prefiggere</i> , to prefix.	...	<i>prefissi</i>	...	<i>prefisso.</i>
<i>preludere</i> , to prelude.	...	<i>prelusi</i>	...	<i>preluso.</i>
<i>prendere</i> , to take.	...	<i>presi</i>	...	<i>preso.</i>
<i>preporre</i> , to propose.	<i>prepongo</i>	<i>preposi</i>	<i>preporrò</i>	<i>preposto.</i>
<i>prescēgliere</i> , to choose.	<i>prescelgo</i>	<i>prescelsi</i>	<i>presciegilerò,</i> <i>prescerrò</i>	<i>prescelto.</i>
<i>prescindere</i> , to except.	...	...	...	<i>prescisso.</i>

INFINITIVE.	PRESENT.	DEFINITE.	FUTURE.	PARTICIPLE.
<i>prescrivere</i> , to prescribe.	...	<i>prescrissi</i>	...	<i>prescritto.</i>
<i>presedere</i> , to preside.	<i>preseggio</i>	<i>presedetti</i>	...	...
<i>presumere</i> , to presume.	...	<i>presedei</i>		
		<i>presunsi</i>		
		<i>presumei</i>	...	<i>presunto.</i>
<i>pretendere</i> , to presume.	...	<i>pretesi</i>	...	<i>preteso.</i>
<i>prevalere</i> , to prevail.	<i>prevulgo</i>	<i>prevalsi</i>	<i>prevarrò</i>	<i>prevalso,</i> <i>prevalluto.</i>
<i>prevedere</i> , to foresee.	<i>preveggio</i>	<i>previdi</i>	...	<i>previsto,</i> <i>preveduto.</i>
<i>prevenire</i> , to prevent.	<i>prevengo</i>	<i>prevenni</i>	<i>preverrò</i>	<i>prevvenuto.</i>
<i>produrre</i> , to produce.	<i>produco</i>	<i>produssi</i>	...	<i>prodotto.</i>
<i>profondere</i> , to dissipate.	...	<i>profusi</i>	...	<i>profuso.</i>
<i>promettere</i> , to promise.	...	<i>promisi</i>	...	<i>promesso.</i>
<i>promuovere</i> , to promote.	...	<i>promossi</i>	...	<i>promosso.</i>
<i>proporre</i> , to propose.	<i>propongo</i>	<i>proposi</i>	<i>proporrò</i>	<i>proposto.</i>
<i>prorompere</i> , to burst forth.	...	<i>proruppi</i>	...	<i>prorotto.</i>
<i>proscrivere</i> , to proscribe.	...	<i>proscrissi</i>	...	<i>proscritto.</i>
<i>proteggere</i> , to protect.	...	<i>protessi</i>	...	<i>protetto.</i>
<i>protendere</i> , to extend forward.	...	<i>protesi</i>	...	<i>proteso.</i>
<i>protrarre</i> , to protract.	<i>protraggo</i>	<i>protrassi</i>	<i>protrarrò</i>	<i>protratto.</i>
<i>provenire</i> , to derive.	<i>provengo</i>	<i>provenni</i>	<i>proverrò</i>	<i>provenuto.</i>
<i>provvedere</i> , to provide.	<i>provveggo</i>	<i>provvidi</i>	...	<i>provveduto</i> <i>provvisto.</i>
<i>provvedo</i>				
<i>pungere</i> , to prick.	...	<i>punsi</i>	...	<i>punto.</i>
<i>raccendere</i> , to light again.	...	<i>raccesi</i>	...	<i>racceso.</i>
<i>racchiudere</i> , to enclose.	...	<i>racchiusi</i>	...	<i>racchiuso.</i>
<i>radere</i> , to shave.	...	<i>rasi</i>	...	<i>raso.</i>
<i>raccogliere</i> , to pick up.	<i>raccolgo</i>	<i>raccolsi</i>	<i>raccoglierò,</i> <i>raccorrò</i>	<i>raccolto.</i>
<i>raggiungere</i> , to overtake.	...	<i>raggiunsi</i>	...	<i>raggiunto.</i>
<i>raffrenare</i> , to restrain.	<i>raffrenco</i>	<i>raffrenni</i>	<i>raffrenrò</i>	...
<i>ravvedersi</i> , to repent.	<i>mi ravveggo</i>	<i>mi ravvidi</i>	<i>mi ravvedrò</i>	...
<i>ravvolgere</i> , to involve.	...	<i>ravvolsi</i>	...	<i>ravvolto.</i>
<i>recidere</i> , to cut.	...	<i>recisi</i>	...	<i>reciso.</i>
<i>redimere</i> , to redeem.	...	<i>redensi</i>	...	<i>redento.</i>
<i>redire</i> } to return.	<i>riedo</i> , Sing. only; and		<i>rieda</i> , <i>riedano.</i>	
<i>riedere</i> }	Pr. Subj.			
<i>reggere</i> , rule, to hold.	...	<i>ressi</i>	...	<i>retto.</i>
<i>*rendere</i> , to give back.	...	<i>resi</i>	...	<i>reso.</i>
<i>repellere</i> , to repel.	...	<i>repulsi</i>	...	<i>repulso.</i>

INFINITIVE.	PRESENT.	DEFINITE.	FUTURE.	PARTICIPLE. PAST
<i>reprimere</i> , to repress.	...	<i>repressi</i>	...	<i>represso</i> .
<i>rescindere</i> , to cut off, to rescind.	<i>resciso</i> .
<i>resistere</i> , to resist.	<i>resistito</i> .
<i>respingere</i> , to push back.	...	<i>respinsi</i>	...	<i>respinto</i> .
<i>restringere</i> , to restrain.	...	<i>restrinsi</i>	...	<i>ristretto</i> .
<i>retrotrarre</i> , to pull back.	<i>retro- traggo</i>	<i>retrotrassi</i>	<i>retro- trarrò</i>	<i>retrotratto</i> .
<i>riaccendere</i> , to light again.	...	<i>riaccesi</i>	...	<i>riacceso</i> .
<i>riaprire</i> , to re-open.	<i>riaperto</i> .
<i>riardere</i> , to burn again.	...	<i>riarsi</i>	...	<i>riarso</i> .
<i>riassumere</i> , resume, to take up again.	...	<i>riassunsi</i>	...	<i>riassunto</i> .
<i>ricadere</i> , to fall again, to relapse.	...	<i>ricaddi</i>	<i>ricadrò</i>	...
<i>richiedere</i> , to request.	<i>richiedo richieggo</i>	<i>richiesi</i>	...	<i>richiesto</i> .
<i>richiudere</i> , to shut again.	...	<i>richiusi</i>	...	<i>richiuso</i> .
<i>riconoscere</i> , to recognise.	...	<i>riconobbi</i>	...	<i>riconosciuto</i> .
<i>ricoprire</i> , to cover.	<i>ricoperto</i> .
<i>ricorrere</i> , to recur.	...	<i>ricorsi</i>	...	<i>ricorso</i> .
<i>ricuocere</i> , to cook over again.	...	<i>ricossi</i>	<i>ricocerò</i>	<i>ricotto</i> .
<i>ridere</i> , to laugh.	...	<i>risi</i>	...	<i>riso</i> .
<i>ridire</i> , to repeat.	<i>ridico</i>	<i>ridissi</i>	...	<i>ridetto</i> .
<i>ridurre</i> , to reduce.	<i>riduco</i>	<i>ridussi</i>	<i>ridurrò</i>	<i>ridotto</i> .
<i>rifare</i> , to make again.	<i>rifaccio, rifo</i>	<i>rifeci</i>	<i>rifarò</i>	<i>rifatto</i> .
<i>riflettere</i> , to reflect, to refract.	...	<i>riflettei</i> (reflected) <i>riflessi</i> (re- verberated)	<i>rifletterò</i>	<i>riflettuto</i> (reflected). <i>riflesso</i> (re- verberated)
<i>rifondere</i> , to melt again.	...	<i>rifusi</i>	...	<i>rifuso</i>
<i>rifrangere</i> , to refract.	...	<i>rifransi</i>	...	<i>rifranto</i> , <i>rifratto</i>
<i>rifriggere</i> , to fry again.	...	<i>rifrissi</i>	...	<i>rifrutto</i> .
<i>rifulgere</i> , to sparkle.	...	<i>rifulsi</i>	...	<i>rifulso</i> .
<i>rilucere</i> , to shine.	...	<i>rilussi</i>	...	<i>rilucente</i> (pr. p.).
<i>rimanere</i> , to remain.	<i>rimango</i>	<i>rimasi</i>	<i>rimarrò</i>	<i>rimasto</i> .
<i>rimettere</i> , to put back, to replace.	...	<i>rimisi</i>	...	<i>rimesso</i> .
<i>rimordere</i> , to bite again.	...	<i>rimorsi</i>	...	<i>rimorso</i> .
<i>rimuovere</i> , to remove.	...	<i>rimossi</i>	...	<i>rimosso</i> .

INFINITIVE.	PRESENT.	DEFINITE.	FUTURE.	PAST PARTICIPLE.
<i>inchiodare</i> , to shut in.	...	<i>rinchiusi</i>	...	<i>rinchiuso</i> .
<i>incorrere</i> , to pursue.	...	<i>incorsi</i>	...	<i>incorsa</i> .
<i>increscere</i> , to regret.	...	<i>increscetti</i>	...	<i>incresciuto</i> .
<i>ripellere</i> , to repel.	...	<i>ripulsi</i>	...	<i>ripulso</i> .
<i>riporre</i> , to deposit.	<i>ripongo</i>	<i>riposi</i>	<i>riporrò</i>	<i>riposto</i> .
<i>riprendere</i> , to retake.	...	<i>ripresi</i>	...	<i>ripreso</i> .
<i>risalire</i> , to ascend again, to remount.	<i>risalgo</i>	...	...	...
<i>risapere</i> , to hear of.	<i>risò</i>	<i>riscoppi</i>	<i>risaprò</i>	...
<i>riscuotere</i> , to exact pay- ment.	...	<i>riscossi</i>	...	<i>riscosso</i> .
<i>risedere</i> , to reside.	<i>riseggio</i> , <i>risiedo</i>	<i>risedei</i> , <i>risedetti</i>	...	...
<i>risolvere</i> , to resolve.	...	...	...	<i>risolto</i> .
<i>risorgere</i> , to rise again.	...	<i>risorsi</i>	...	<i>risorto</i> .
<i>rispondere</i> , to answer.	...	<i>risposi</i>	...	<i>risposto</i> .
<i>ristare</i> , to stop.	<i>ristò</i>	<i>ristetti</i>	<i>ristarò</i>	...
<i>ristringere</i> , to restrain.	...	<i>ristrinsi</i>	...	<i>ristretto</i> .
<i>ritenere</i> , to retain.	<i>ritengo</i>	<i>ritenni</i>	<i>riterrò</i>	...
<i>ritingere</i> , to colour again.	...	<i>ritinsi</i>	...	<i>ritinto</i> .
<i>ritogliere</i> , to retake.	<i>ritolgo</i>	<i>ritolsi</i>	<i>ritorrò</i>	<i>ritolto</i> .
<i>ritorcere</i> , to twist again.	...	<i>ritorsi</i>	...	<i>ritorto</i> .
<i>ritrarre</i> , to derive.	<i>ritraggo</i>	<i>ritrassi</i>	<i>ritrarrò</i>	<i>ritratto</i> .
<i>riuscire</i> , to succeed.	<i>riesco</i>	...	...	...
<i>rivedere</i> , to see again.	<i>riveggo</i> , <i>rivedo</i>	<i>rividi</i>	<i>rivedrò</i>	<i>rivisto</i> , <i>riveduto</i> .
<i>rodere</i> , to gnaw.	...	<i>rosi</i>	...	<i>roso</i> .
<i>rompere</i> , to break.	...	<i>ruppi</i>	...	<i>rotto</i> .
<i>salire</i> , to ascend.	<i>salgo</i> , <i>salisco</i>	...	...	...
<i>sapere</i> , to know.	<i>so</i>	<i>seppi</i>	<i>saprò</i>	...
<i>scadere</i> , degenerate, to fall due.	...	<i>scaddi</i>	<i>scadrò</i>	...
<i>scogliere</i> , to choose.	<i>scelgo</i>	<i>scelsi</i>	<i>sceglirò</i> , <i>scelto</i> , <i>scerrò</i>	...
<i>scendere</i> , to descend.	...	<i>scesi</i>	...	<i>scesiò</i> .
<i>sciogliere</i> , <i>scindere</i> , <i>scin- gere</i> , to ungird.	...	<i>sciinsi</i>	...	<i>scinto</i> .
<i>sciogliere</i> , to untie.	<i>sciolgo</i>	<i>sciolsi</i>	<i>scioglierò</i> , <i>sciolto</i> , <i>sciorrò</i>	...
<i>scommettere</i> , to bet.	...	<i>scommisi</i>	...	<i>scommesso</i> .
* <i>scomparire</i> , to disap- pear.	<i>scompa-</i> <i>risco</i>	<i>scomparvi</i>	...	<i>scomparso</i> .
<i>scomporre</i> , to dis- arrange.	<i>scompongo</i>	<i>scomposi</i>	<i>scomporrò</i>	<i>scomposto</i> .

INFINITIVE.	PRESENT.	DEFINITE.	FUTURE.	PAST PARTICIPLE.
<i>sconfiggere</i> , to defeat.	...	<i>sconfissi</i>	...	<i>sconfitto</i> , <i>sconfisso</i> .
<i>sconnettere</i> , to disjoin.	...	<i>sconnessi</i> , <i>sconnettei</i>	...	<i>sconnesso</i> .
<i>sconoscere</i> , to be unrecognised, ungrateful.	...	<i>sconobbi</i>	...	<i>sconosciuto</i> .
<i>scontorcere</i> , to distort.	...	<i>scontorsi</i>	...	<i>scontorto</i> .
<i>sconvenire</i> , to be unbecoming.	<i>sconviengo</i>	<i>sconvenni</i>	<i>sconverrò</i>	<i>sconvenuto</i> .
<i>sconvolgere</i> , to subvert.	...	<i>sconvolsi</i>	...	<i>sconvolto</i> .
<i>scoprire</i> , to discover.	...	...	...	<i>scoperto</i> .
<i>scorgere</i> , to perceive.	...	<i>scorsi</i>	...	<i>scorto</i> .
<i>scorrere</i> , to flow, to go over.	...	<i>scorsi</i>	...	<i>scorso</i> .
<i>scoscendere</i> , to rend asunder.	...	<i>scoscesi</i>	...	<i>scosceso</i> .
<i>scrivere</i> , to write.	...	<i>scrissi</i>	...	<i>scritto</i> .
<i>scuotere</i> , to shake.	...	<i>scossi</i>	...	<i>scosso</i> .
<i>sedere</i> , to sit down.	{ <i>seggo</i> , <i>siedo</i>	{ <i>sedeci</i> , <i>sedetti</i>	...	...
<i>sedurre</i> , to seduce.	<i>seduco</i>	<i>sedussi</i>	...	<i>sedotto</i> .
<i>seppellire</i> , to bury.	...	...	...	<i>sepolto</i> .
<i>serpere</i> , to creep along.	<i>serpe</i> , 3 p.	<i>serpa</i> , 3 p.	Pr. Subj.	...
<i>smettere</i> , to stop, to lapse.	...	<i>smisi</i>	...	<i>smesso</i> .
<i>smungere</i> , <i>smiungere</i> , to squeeze.	<i>smungo</i>	<i>smunsi</i>	...	<i>smunto</i> .
<i>smuovere</i> , to move with difficulty.	...	<i>smossi</i>	...	<i>smosso</i> .
<i>socchiudere</i> , to half shut.	...	<i>socchiusi</i>	...	<i>socchiuso</i> .
<i>soccorrere</i> , to help.	...	<i>soccorsi</i>	...	<i>soccorso</i> .
<i>soddisfare</i> , to satisfy.	<i>soddisfo</i> , <i>soddisfaccio</i>	<i>soddisfeci</i>	<i>soddisfarò</i>	<i>soddisfatto</i> .
<i>sofferire</i> , <i>soffrire</i> , to suffer.	<i>sofferisco</i>	...	...	<i>sofferto</i> .
<i>soffriggere</i> , to stew.	...	<i>soffrissi</i>	...	<i>soffritto</i> .
<i>soffolgere</i> , to support.	...	...	...	<i>soffolto</i> .
<i>soggiacere</i> , to be subject to.	<i>soggiaccio</i>	<i>soggiacqui</i>	...	<i>soggiaciuto</i> .
<i>soggiungere</i> , to add.	...	<i>soggiunsi</i>	...	<i>soggiunto</i> .
<i>solere</i> , to be accustomed.	<i>soglio</i>	...	...	<i>solito</i> .
<i>solvere</i> , to solve.	...	...	...	<i>soluto</i> .
<i>sommèrgere</i> , to submerge.	...	<i>sommersi</i>	...	<i>sommerso</i> .
<i>sommettere</i> , to submit.	...	<i>sommisi</i>	...	<i>sommesso</i> .
<i>sopprimere</i> , to suppress.	...	<i>soppressi</i>	...	<i>soppresso</i> .

INFINITE.	PRESENT.	DEFINITE.	FUTURE.	PARTICIPLE.
<i>sopraffare</i> , to overcome.	<i>sopraffo</i> ,	<i>sopraffeci</i>	<i>sopraffarò</i>	<i>sopraffatto</i> .
	<i>sopraffaccio</i>			
<i>sopraggiungere</i> , to overtake.	...	<i>sopraggiunsi</i>	...	<i>sopraggiunto</i> .
<i>soprapporre</i> , to put upon.	<i>soprappongo</i>	<i>soprapponsi</i>	...	<i>soprapposto</i> .
<i>soprassedere</i> , to supersede.	<i>soprasiedo</i> ,	<i>soprasiede</i>,	...	...
	<i>soprasseggo</i>	<i>soprasse-detti</i>		
<i>soprastare</i> , to stand over.	<i>soprasto</i>	<i>soprastetti</i>	<i>soprastarò</i>	...
<i>sopravvenire</i> , to supervene.	<i>sopravvengo</i>	<i>sopravvenni</i>	<i>sopravverrò</i>	<i>sopravvenuto</i> .
* <i>sopravvivere</i> ,	...	<i>sopravvivsi</i>	<i>sopravvivrò</i>	<i>sopravvivuto</i> .
<i>soprintendere</i> , to oversee.	...	<i>soprintesi</i>	...	<i>soprinteso</i> .
<i>sorgere</i> , to rise.	...	<i>sorsi</i>	...	<i>sorto</i> .
<i>sorprendere</i> , to surprise.	...	<i>sorpresi</i>	...	<i>sorpreso</i> .
<i>sorrèggere</i> , to hold up.	...	<i>sorressi</i>	...	<i>sorretto</i> .
<i>sorridere</i> , to smile.	...	<i>sorrisi</i>	...	<i>sorriso</i> .
<i>soscrivere</i> , to subscribe.	...	<i>soscrissi</i>	...	<i>soscritto</i> .
<i>sospèndere</i> , to suspend.	...	<i>sospesi</i>	...	<i>sospeso</i> .
<i>sospiñgere</i> , to push.	...	<i>sospinsi</i>	...	<i>sospinto</i> .
<i>sostenere</i> , to sustain.	<i>sostengo</i>	<i>sostenni</i>	<i>sosterrò</i>	...
<i>sottèndere</i> , to tighten from underneath.	...	<i>sottesi</i>	...	<i>sotteso</i> .
<i>sottintèndere</i> , to be understood.	...	<i>sottintesi</i>	...	<i>sottinteso</i> .
<i>sottomètttere</i> , to submit.	...	<i>sottomisi</i>	...	<i>sottomesso</i> .
<i>sottoporre</i> , to put under.	<i>sottopongo</i>	<i>sottoposi</i>	...	<i>sottoposto</i> .
<i>sottoscrivere</i> , to subscribe.	...	<i>sottoscrissi</i>	...	<i>sottoscritto</i> .
<i>sottostare</i> , to be under.	<i>sottostò</i>	<i>sottostetti</i>	<i>sottostarò</i>	...
<i>sottrarre</i> , to subtract.	<i>sottraggo</i>	<i>sottrassi</i>	...	<i>sottratto</i> .
<i>sovrapporre</i> , to put upon.	<i>sovrappongo</i>	<i>sovrapponsi</i>	...	<i>sovrapposto</i> .
<i>sovrastare</i> , to stand over.	<i>sovrasò</i>	<i>sovrastetti</i>	<i>sovrastarò</i>	...
<i>sovvenire</i> , to help.	<i>sovveggo</i>	<i>sovvenni</i>	<i>sovverrò</i>	<i>sovvenuto</i> .
<i>sovvenirsi</i> , to remember.	<i>mi sovveggo</i>	<i>mi sovvenni</i>	<i>mi sovverrò</i>	<i>sovvenuto</i> .
<i>spàndere</i> , to spread.	...	...	...	<i>spanto</i> .

INFINITIVE.	PRESENT.	DEFINITE.	FUTURE.	PAST PARTICIPLE.
<i>spargere</i> , to scatter.	...	<i>sparsi</i>	...	<i>sperso.</i>
* <i>sparire</i> , to disappear.	<i>sparisco</i>	<i>sparvi</i>	...	<i>sparso.</i>
<i>spēgnere</i> , to extinguish.	<i>spengo</i>	<i>spensi</i>	...	<i>spento.</i>
<i>spēndere</i> , to spend.	...	<i>spesi</i>	...	<i>speso.</i>
<i>spērgere</i> , to disperse.	...	<i>spersi</i>	...	<i>sperso.</i>
<i>spingere</i> , to push.	...	<i>spinsi</i>	...	<i>spinto.</i>
† <i>spiovare</i> , to cease raining.	...	<i>spiovrē</i>	...	...
<i>spōrgere</i> , to lean forth.	...	<i>sporsi</i>	...	<i>sporto.</i>
<i>stare</i> , to stand.	<i>sto</i>	<i>stetti</i>	<i>starò</i>	...
<i>stēndere</i> , to extend.	...	<i>stesi</i>	...	<i>steso.</i>
<i>stingere</i> , to take the colour off.	...	<i>stinsi</i>	...	<i>stinto.</i>
<i>stōrcere</i> , to distort.	...	<i>storsi</i>	...	<i>storto.</i>
<i>stracōrrere</i> , to run past.	...	<i>stracorsi</i>	...	<i>stracorso.</i>
<i>strafure</i> , to overdo.	<i>strajō</i>	<i>strafeci</i>	<i>strafarò</i>	<i>strafatto.</i>
<i>stravincere</i> , to overpower.	...	<i>stravinsi</i>	...	<i>stravinto.</i>
<i>stravōlgere</i> , to distort violently.	...	<i>stravolsi</i>	...	<i>stravolto.</i>
<i>stringere</i> , to clutch, press.	...	<i>strinsi</i>	...	<i>stretto.</i>
<i>strūggere</i> , to melt.	...	<i>strussi</i>	...	<i>strutto.</i>
<i>strūggersi</i> , to long.	...	<i>mi strussi</i>	...	<i>strüttosi.</i>
<i>succēdere</i> , to succeed.	...	<i>successi</i>	...	<i>successo.</i>
<i>suddividere</i> , to subdivide.	...	<i>suddivisi</i>	...	<i>suddiviso.</i>
<i>supporre</i> , to suppose.	<i>suppongo</i>	<i>supposi</i>	...	<i>supposto.</i>
<i>sussistere</i> , to subsist.	...	<i>sussisteti, sussistettti</i>	...	<i>sussistito.</i>
<i>svēllere</i> , to uproot.	<i>svello, svelgo</i>	<i>svelsi</i>	<i>svelgerò, svellerò</i>	<i>svolto.</i>
<i>svenire</i> , to swoon.	<i>svengo</i>	<i>svenni</i>	...	<i>svenuto.</i>
<i>svōlgere</i> , to unfold.	...	<i>svolsi</i>	...	<i>svolto.</i>
<i>tacere</i> , to be silent.	<i>taccio</i>	<i>tacqui</i>	...	<i>taciuto.</i>
<i>tēndere</i> , to tend.	...	<i>tesi</i>	...	<i>teso.</i>
<i>tenere</i> , to hold.	<i>tengo</i>	<i>tenni</i>	<i>terrò</i>	...
<i>tērgere</i> , to wipe.	...	<i>tersi</i>	...	<i>terso.</i>
<i>tingere</i> , to colour.	...	<i>tinsi</i>	...	<i>tinto.</i>
<i>tōgliere</i> , to take off.	<i>tolgo</i>	<i>tolsi</i>	<i>torrò, toglierò</i>	<i>tolto.</i>
<i>tōrcere</i> , to twist.	...	<i>torsi</i>	...	<i>torto.</i>
<i>tradurre</i> , to translate.	<i>traduco</i>	<i>tradussi</i>	...	<i>tradotto.</i>
<i>trafiggere</i> , to transfix.	...	<i>trafissi</i>	...	<i>trafitto.</i>
<i>transigere</i> , to transact.	...	...	...	<i>transatto.</i>
<i>trafiggere</i> , to embroider.	...	<i>trapunsi</i>	...	<i>trapunto.</i>
<i>trarre</i> , to draw.	<i>traggo</i>	<i>trassi</i>	<i>trarrò</i>	<i>tratto.</i>

INFINITIVE.	PRESENT.	DEFINITE.	FUTURE.	PARTICIPLE.
<i>trascègliere</i> , to choose.	<i>trascelgo</i>	<i>trascelsi</i>	<i>trascegnerò,</i> <i>trascerrò</i>	<i>trascelto.</i>
<i>trascèndere</i> , to transcend.	...	<i>trascesi</i>	...	<i>trasceso.</i>
<i>trascòrrere</i> , to go over.	...	<i>trascorsi</i>	...	<i>trascorso.</i>
<i>trascrivere</i> , to transcribe.	...	<i>trascrissi</i>	...	<i>trascritto.</i>
<i>trasfondere</i> , to transfuse.	...	<i>trasfusi</i>	...	<i>trasfuso.</i>
<i>trasmettere</i> , to transmit.	...	<i>trasmisi</i>	...	<i>trasmesso.</i>
<i>trasporre</i> , to transpose.	<i>traspongo</i>	<i>trasposi</i>	<i>trasporrò</i>	<i>trasposto.</i>
<i>trattenere</i> , to retain.	<i>trattengo</i>	<i>trattenni</i>	<i>tratterrò</i>	...
<i>travedere</i> , to see dimly.	...	<i>travidi</i>	<i>travedrò</i>	...
<i>travincere</i> , to overpower.	...	<i>travinsi</i>	...	<i>travinto.</i>
<i>travolgere</i> , to upset, to turn topsy-turvy.	...	<i>travolsi</i>	...	<i>travolto.</i>
<i>uccidere</i> , to kill.	...	<i>uccisi</i>	...	<i>ucciso.</i>
<i>udire</i> , to hear.	<i>odo</i>	...	<i>udirò, udirò</i>	...
<i>ungere</i> , to anoint.	...	<i>unsi</i>	...	<i>unto.</i>
<i>urgere</i> , to be urgent.	Only the Third Pers. of Pres., Imperf. and Fut. Indicative, and Pres. Part.			
<i>uscire, escire</i> , to go out.	<i>esco</i>	...	...	...
<i>valere</i> , to be worth.	<i>valgo</i>	<i>valsi</i>	<i>varrò</i>	<i>valso, valuto.</i>
<i>vedere</i> , to see.	<i>vedo, veggo, veggio</i>	<i>vidi</i>	<i>vedrò</i>	<i>veduto, visto.</i>
<i>venire</i> , to come.	<i>vengo</i>	<i>venni</i>	<i>verrò</i>	<i>venuto.</i>
<i>vertere</i> , to be pend- ing.	...	...	...	<i>vertente</i> (pr. p.).
<i>vincere</i> , to win.	...	<i>vinsi</i>	...	<i>vinto.</i>
<i>vivere</i> , to live.	...	<i>vissi</i>	<i>vivrò</i>	<i>vissuto.</i>
<i>volere</i> , to be willing.	<i>voglio, vo'</i>	<i>volli</i>	<i>vorrò</i>	...
<i>volgere</i> , to turn.	...	<i>volsi</i>	...	<i>volto.</i>

il compito, the task.

la grotta, the cave.

la collera, the anger.

discorrere, to discourse.

invadere, to invade.

il bambino, the baby.

arduo, arduous.

di valore, valuable.

appena, as soon as.

rinchiudere, to shut in.

<i>intraprendere</i> , to undertake.	<i>offendere</i> , to offend.
<i>intendere</i> , to intend.	<i>arrossire</i> , to blush.
<i>emergere</i> , to emerge.	<i>dividere</i> , to divide.
<i>impallidire</i> , to become pale.	<i>riprendere</i> , to retake.
<i>nuocere</i> , to hurt.	<i>narrare</i> , to narrate.
<i>riaccendere</i> , to re-light.	<i>vendere</i> , to sell.
<i>succedere</i> , to succeed.	<i>portare</i> , to carry.
	<i>fuggire</i> , to run away.

LXI.

1. Mio fratello rinchiusse la ragazza nella camera della madre.
 2. Ha il gatto ucciso il sorcio? Non ancora. 3. Io discorsi con tua sorella del suo viaggio in Francia. 4. Prese il servo il mio bastone? No, ma il ragazzo l'ha ascoso. 5. I nemici invasero il nostro paese tre anni fa. 6. Abbiamo ricevuto dei libri da nostro zio stamattina; cominceremo a leggerli subito. 7. Egli ha intrapreso un arduo compito; credi che succederà? 8. Intendeva la ragazza offendere suo padre? No, non ha mai inteso offenderlo. 9. Appena emergemmo dalla grottà, incontrammo il mendicante. 10. La ragazza sdrucciò il suo abito stamattina. 11. Mia sorella arrossisce sempre quando è lodata. 12. Perché impallidite? Temiamo la collera di nostro zio.

1. I have not lost the money that my mother gave me.
 2. I hope he has not injured the boy. 3. Your pupil (f.) has lost much time to-day; why have you not reproved her? 4. My brother hid the child's book under the table. 5. She laughed when her brother told how he had found his dog. 6. The servants (f.) lighted the fires in every room of the house. 7. My sister's friend has sold her beautiful house and many valuable paintings. 8. Have you received a present from your brother? Yes; he gave me a new dress. 9. You will lose your watch; I never carry mine in my hand. 10. The water boils, let us make some tea. 11. Does the baby sleep? I do not know. 12. The naughty boy has run away from his master.

il geranio, the geranium.
di già, already.
gentile, kind.
arricchire, to enrich.
tossire, to cough.
avvizzire, to wither.
applaudire, to applaud.
inghiottire, to swallow.
assorbire, to absorb.
burlarsi, to mock.
il vicino, the neighbour.
la ragazzina, the little girl.

la partenza, the departure.
la stalla, the stable.
abile, clever.
fiorire, to blossom.
ruggire, to roar.
insegnare, to teach.
partire, to depart, divide.
sprizzare, to sprinkle.
fidarsi, to trust.
occuparsi, to be occupied.
fare una passeggiata, to take a walk.

LXII.

1. Mio zio ha arricchito tutti i suoi nipoti col suo danaro.
 2. Ella impallidisce, è ammalata? No, signore, è soltanto stanca.
 3. La ragazza tosse molto, il dottore deve vederla.
 4. Il soldato fu ferito nella seconda battaglia.
 5. I gerani fioriscono nel giardino del mio vicino.
 6. Dov'è la mia rosa?
 In questo vaso, avvizzisce di già.
 7. La ragazza ha sempre paura quando i leoni ruggiscono.
 8. Hanno applaudita l'attrice al teatro del re ogni sera.
 9. Egli ha fatto scrivere a sua sorella tre lettere.
 10. Non ho ancora dato un anello alla mia amica.
 11. Il maestro insegna a leggere ai suoi allievi.
 12. La gentile signora ha dato due arance alla ragazzina.

1. Had the roses in my garden blossomed yesterday? I do not know; but they are all blossoming to-day.
 2. I should have applauded the actress if she had been clever.
 3. The poor old man coughs all day; he is unwell.
 4. The water of that river is very muddy.
 5. Before your departure divide your money with your sister.
 6. The ground absorbs the water that we have sprinkled on the flowers.
 7. I wish I had given more money to that poor beggar.
 8. Give Emma, some tea; she is very thirsty.
 9. He ordered his servant to take the horses to the stable.
 10. Do you trust your new servant? Yes; I find her excellent.
 11. Boys, do not mock that poor man.
 12. How do you occupy yourself all day? I read and write, and I also take long walks.

la confidenza, the confidence.
l'impresa, the undertaking.
la fedeltà, the loyalty.
la Turchia, Turkey.
il dominio, the dominion.
bruno, brown.
dubitare, to doubt.
godere, to enjoy.
esitare, to hesitate.
riflettere, to reflect.
cercare, to seek, to try.
equivalere, to be equivalent.
abusare, to abuse.
liberare, to free.

la ricchezza, the wealth.
la pena, the punishment, trouble.
il soldo, the penny.
Porecchio, the ear.
la Grecia, Greece.
ingrato, ungrateful.
discorrere, to talk.
avanzarsi, to advance.
toccare, to concern.
distinguere, to distinguish.
sopravvivere, to survive.
supplire, to supply.
guardare, to look.
domandare di, to inquire after.

LXIII.

1. Il re non dubita della fedeltà dei suoi sudditi. 2. Colui è un ingrato, ha abusato della mia confidenza. 3. Discorreva di mia zia? No, discorrevamo di suo padre. 4. Godeva lungo tempo della ricchezza di suo zio? No, morì l'anno seguente. 5. Aiuterò mio fratello a questa impresa. 6. I nemici non, esitavano ad avanzarsi. 7. Questo ragazzo non ubbidisce mai a suo padre. 8. Questa quistione non ci tocca. 9. Questa ragazza pensa sempre alla sua grande amica. 10. Mio padre è distinto pella sua generosità. 11. Domandava il dottore della sua malata? Sì, signore. 12. Che cerca Maria di fare alla finestra? Ella cerca di aprirla.

1. Children, always obey your parents. 2. Do you think that wounded soldier will survive? I do not know. 3. Ten Italian centesimi are worth one English penny. 4. Why do you hesitate, Charles? Because I do not know whether 25 pounds will be sufficient for the journey. 5. This dog is distinguished from the others by his brown ears. 6. The boy will fall from the window, if he does not take care. 7. Greece is now free from the dominion of Turkey. 8. We shall begin reading an Italian novel next week. 9. He would have asked your sister for an orange if he had not been afraid. 10. Why are you reflecting on your past troubles? 11. Have you inquired after your friend's sister? 12. No; I shall try to go to her house this afternoon.

LONDRA, *il tredici Dicembre*, 1904.

CARO SIGNOR M.,—Mi rincresce di strubarla, ma può. Lei raccomandarmi dei buoni libri di storia? Il mio esame è ora vicino, e desidero molto leggere libri, che trattano il meglio il mio soggetto. Ne la ringrazio anticipatamente e la prego gradire i miei più cordiali saluti.

BRIGHTON, *il sedici Dicembre*, 1904.

CARO GIORGIO,—I libri che posso raccomandare saranno spediti a Lei in pochi giorni; legga molto diligentemente “La Storia della Ribellione” del Clarendon e il “Sommario della Storia d’Italia” di Cesare Balbo, libri che La istruiranno meglio d’ogni altro libro.

Coi miei sinceri voti pel suo buon successo.

LONDRA, *il cinque Agosto*, 1905.

MIA CARA LUCIA,—Vorrei sapere se sei ancora ritornata da Firenze; lo spero, perchè bramo che tu venga qui sabato a passare meco quindici giorni nella nostra casa nella Scozia. Preferisci viaggiare durante il giorno o la notte? Vi è un convoglio celere che parte da Londra alle nove e mezzo della sera. Riserverò tutte le mie nuove sino alla settimana prossima, quando spero vederti.

LONDRA, *il sette Agosto*, 1905.

MIA CARA EMILIA,—Ho aperto la tua lettera a mia sorella, e scrivo ora invece di essa. Lucia è ancora a Firenze; e poichè non l’aspettiamo a casa prima del mese prossimo, non potrà accettare il tuo invito gentilissimo alla Scozia. Senza dubbio mia sorella stessa ti scriverà tosto; io so che sarà molto dispiacente di non poter trattenersi teco. Sperando che le tue vacanze saranno piacevoli, credimi.

LONDRA, *il tre Maggio*, 1903.

MIA CARA MARIA,—È lunghissimo tempo da che hai scritto, e la sola ragione del tuo silenzio, che possa immaginare, è che

sei ammalata, ma questa congettura spero però che sia falsa. Hai passato piacevoli vacanze di Pasqua e sei stata in campagna? Fummo in St. Margaret's Bay; è un luogo molto primitivo e pittoresco, e ci piacque assai. Due o tre volte andammo a Dover. Il porto e sopra tutto il castello sono interessanti, nell' antica cappella dell' ultimo vedemmo della mirabile architettura, ed anche i differenti giacchi di maglia portati nei secoli passati.

Sei stata a qualche ballo? Dal mio ritorno in città sono andata a molti; il mese prossimo mia sorella ed io andiamo ad un ballo nella nuova sala nei giardini botanici; se farà una notte bella e calda sarà delizioso.

Come progredisce nella musica? Ho imparato una delle Improvvise di Chopin, è molto vezzosa, ma anche molto difficile. Spero avere tosto delle lezioni di canto, il che mi piace molto.

Non posso scrivere più perchè sono molto affaccendata questa sera, ma spero, amica mia, che mi darai tosto tue nuove.

Con tanti cari saluti,

Tua affezionata

BEATRICE.

ROME, 15th January, 1895.

MY DEAR LOUISA,—We arrived here on Thursday, and are enjoying ourselves very much. At first it seemed strange to hear every one speaking Italian, but now we are becoming accustomed to it. The weather is beautiful, very different from the rain and cold we left in London. I cannot begin to tell you of all the places we have seen, even during these few days, but Mary promises to write you a letter full of descriptions in a little while.

This is only to tell you of our safe arrival, and to send you our love.

Believe me your affectionate friend,

BEATRICE.

LONDRA, *il primo Giugno*, 1905.

MIA CARA SUSANNA,—Nella mia ultima lettera io ti prometteva presto mandarti un racconto della nostra visita in Devonshire; tengo ora la mia promessa e spero che la mia descrizione sarà interessante.

Il primo luogo dove dimorammo era molto vezzoso; in ispecie osservammo i belli giardini, che appartenevano alle case, nè mai mi ricordo d'avere veduto fiori in tale profusione.

Stavamo soltanto una notte in questa borgata vezzosa, perchè eravamo ansiose d'andare a Lynmouth e Lynton; la sola maniera di arrivare a questi villaggi era a mezzo la diligenza. Non mai oblierò questa gita in diligenza; per venti miglia traversammo terre paludose; la varietà di colori era maravigliosa, ciascun colle aveva una differente tinta. Quando eravamo nella vicinanza di Lynmouth, passammo l'estremità d'una rupe, al cui piede era il mare; qualche volta pareva come se andassimo giù nel mare. Erano le otto quando arrivammo a Lynmouth. È un luogo molto pittoresco; il villaggio, che è in una valle, è circondato da ogni lato, all'eccezione dov'è il mare, da colli coperti d'alberi; a traverso la piccola strada un torrente scorre e nel suo corso forma molte cascate d'acqua.

Non posso dirti altro questa sera, perchè sono molto stanca; ti prometto scrivere di nuovo tosto.

LITTLEBOROUGH, *25th January*, 1895.

MY DEAR BEATRICE,—I was very glad to receive your letter and to know that you like Rome so much. When do you go to Naples? Do not forget to bring Lucy some relics for her museum. We often speak of you all, and hope your mother is well and enjoys her journey.

We have had good skating for ten days, and are going again to the pond this afternoon. Lucy went to a dance at the Hall

on Wednesday, and enjoyed herself very much; there was a children's play first and then the dance.

With love to your mother and Mary,

Believe me your affectionate friend,

LÓUISA.

LONDRA, *il cinque Ottobre*, 1905.

MIA CARA AMALIA,—Le vacanze sono ora finite; io sono un poco contenta perchè è sempre piacevole ricominciare lo studio, non lo credi? Mi sono attesa una lettera da te, ma suppongo che sei ancora in campagna, e che non hai avuto tempo per scrivere. Dopo che t'ho veduta, due mesi fa, sono andata a Lucerna. La prospettiva nel vicinato di Lucerna è bellissima, e variata; il tempo anche fu sublime, e durante tutto il giorno fui fuori di casa. I giorni passarono presto, troppo prestamente per me, e tosto fui obbligata ritornare a Londra.

Sarai contenta udire che mia sorella sta meglio e che può ora andar fuori quotidianamente. Sono molto affaccendata stamattina e così non posso scrivere più, ma spero, amica mia, che mi darai tosto tue nuove.

FLORENCE, *February 1st*, 1895.

•MY DEAR MARY,—You will be glad to hear that I have come so far on my journey without any accident. I left Paris on Monday night, and seem to have been travelling ever since. This is a beautiful city. I have seen but little yet; to-morrow I shall begin in earnest. There is so much to be seen, and there are so many associations here for all lovers of Italian literature, that I fear my three weeks will be gone before I have seen the half of all. I have planned to see.

The others are not with me—Paul is in Ravenna to visit

Dante's tomb, and Charles has gone to Perugia and to Assissi, where your hero St. Francis was born.

With love to all at home,

I am your affectionate brother,

JOHN.

LONDON, *August 1st*, 1895.

DEAR JOHN,—As you wish to read some Italian books during your holidays, I am sending you a few which I hope you will like. I have chosen for you three historical novels that are very much read in Italy. If there are any words you do not understand, send me a list of them and I shall be glad to translate them for you. Of course you are not likely to have a dictionary with you in Scotland.

With kind regards to your brothers and yourself,

Believe me your sincere friend,

PAUL LEONI.

LONDON, *August 2nd*, 1895.

DEAR MR. LEONI (PREGIATISSIMO SIGNORE),—The books you were kind enough to send me were received last evening. Thank you very much for them.

I shall try to read as much as possible alone, but in case of difficulty I shall be glad to avail myself of your offer to translate.

I have only had time to look through the books yet; but they seem interesting, and I am eager to begin reading them.

We go to Scotland next week, and shall not return before the 10th of September.

Hoping to have the pleasure of continuing our lessons in the autumn,

Believe me, sir,

Your grateful pupil,

JOHN M.

LONDON, *May 3rd*, 1895.

MY DEAREST JULIA,—On Monday afternoon my father has promised to take me for a drive in the country, and in the evening we shall go to the theatre. Will you come? We are very anxious to have you, and have already secured places for three, so you must make one of the party.

Come early, not later than twelve o'clock; we shall have an early luncheon.

Your affectionate friend,

MARTHA.

LONDON, *May 3rd*, 1895.

MY DEAR MARTHA,—I shall be delighted to spend Monday with you, and think your father is very kind to invite me. Do not be afraid of my being late.

Your choice of a day was most fortunate, as I am engaged for every other day next week.

Believe me

Affectionately yours,

JULIA.

Ad Alessandro Manzoni.

MIO CARO MANZONI,—Quel Voi mi ha fatto gran pro, perchè davvero il signor Lei è un signore sguaiatissimo messo lì apposta per imbrogliare un pover uomo che vorrebbe andar per le lisce.

A me accade che il Lei mi tien legato e quasi rattappito nel cerchio delle frasche e delle gretterie grammaticali, e vorrei essere frustato se col Lei alla mano mi riesce di palesare un quinto dell' animo mio. . . .

Non vedo l'ora di abbracciarvi, di starmene un po' con voi; datemene più tempo che potete, ve ne prego. Addio.

GIUSEPPE GIUSTI.

VOCABULARY.

A.

a, an, *un* (*uno*), m.; *una*, f.
 absorb, to —, *assorbire*.
 abuse, to —, *abusare*.
 ache, to —, *dolersi*.
 accident, *accidente*.
 accompany, to —, *accompagnare*.
 account, *ragguaglio*.
 acting, *rappresentazione*.
 actor, *attore*.
 actress, *attrice*.
 admit, to —, *ammettere*.
 advance, to —, *avanzarsi*.
 advice, *consiglio*.
 affix, *affiggere*.
 Africa, *l'Africa*.
 after, afterwards, *dopo*.
 again, *un'altra volta*.
 against, *contro*.
 age, *età*.
 ago, *fa*.
 album, *album*.
 all, *tutto*.
 allow, to —, *permettere*.
 almost, *quasi*.
 along, *lungo*.
 aloud, *ad alta voce*.
 already, *già*.
 also, *anche, altresì*.
 although, *sebbene*.
 altogether, *affatto, tutto*.
 always, *sempre*.
 America, *l'America*.
 ancestors, *maggiori*.

ancient, *antico*.
 and, *e, ed*.
 anger, *collera*.
 angry, mad (of a dog), *arrabbiato*.
 animal, *animale*.
 annals, *annali*.
 anniversary, *anniversario*.
 applaud, to —, *applaudire*.
 apple, *pomo, mela*.
 April, *Aprile*.
 arduous, *arduo*.
 arm, yard-measure, *braccio*.
 army, *esercito*.
 arrest, to —, *arrestare*.
 arrive, to —, *arrivare*.
 arrow, *quadrello* m., pl. *le quadrella*.
 Asia, *l'Asia*.
 ask, *domandare, chiedere*.
 assist, to —, *assistere*.
 astride, *cavalcioni*.
 attack, *assalto*.
 August, *Agosto*.
 aunt, *zia*.
 author, *autore*.
 authoress, *autrice*.
 away! *via!*

B.

baby, *bambino*.
 bad, *cattivo*.
 baked, *cotto*.
 ball, *ballo*.
 banish, to —, *esiliare*.

- bank, *banco, ripa*.
 barn, *granaio*.
 basket, *canestra*.
 battle, *battaglia*.
 bazaar, *bazar*.
 be, to —, *essere*.
 beat, to —, *percuotere*.
 Beatrice, *Beatrice*.
 beautiful, *bello*.
 beauty, *bellezza*.
 because, *perchè*.
 bed, *letto*.
 beer, *birra*.
 before, *prima di, innanzi, dianzi, avanti*.
 beggar, *mendicante*.
 begin, to —, *cominciare*.
 behind, *dietro*.
 believe, to —, *credere*.
 belong, to —, *appartenere*.
 benevolent, *benévolo*.
 beside, *accanto a*.
 besides, *altresì, accanto*.
 bet, to —, *scommettere*.
 betrothal, *sponsali*.
 better, *meglio, migliore*.
 bill, *conto*.
 bird, *uccello*.
 birthday, *giorno natalizio*.
 birthplace, *luogo natio*.
 bishop, *vescovo*.
 black, *nero*.
 blame, to —, *biasimare*.
 blind, *cieco*.
 blossom, to —, *fiorire*.
 blue, *turchino*.
 blush, to —, *arrossire*.
 boast, to —, *vantarsi*.
 boat, *battello*.
 boil, to —, *bollire*.
 bone, *osso*.
 book, *libro*.
 bookcase, *libreria*.
 bookshelf, *scaffale*.
 boot, *stivale*.
 both, *ambo, entrambi, ambedue*.
 bottle, *bottiglia*.
 box, *scatola*.
 boy, *ragazzo*.
 bracelet, *braccialetto, maniglia*.
 brain, *cervello*.
 brave, *bravo*.
 bravely, *coraggiosamente*.
 bravery, *coraggio*.
 Brazil, *il Brasile*.
 bread, *pane*.
 break, to —, *rompere*.
 breakfast, *colazione*.
 bring, to —, *portare*.
 broken, *rotto*.
 brother, *fratello*.
 brown, *bruno*.
 burn, *ardere*.
 burst, to —, *scoppiare*.
 bury, *seppellire*.
 bushel, *moggio m., pl. le moggia; staio m., pl. le staja*.
 busy, *occupato*.
 but, *ma*.
 butter, *butirro*.
 buy, to —, *comprare*.

C.

- cabinet, *gabinetto*.
 Cairo, *il Cairo*.
 cake, *focaccia*.
 camel, *cammello*.
 camp, *campo*.
 canal, *canale*.
 captain, *capitano*.
 capture, to —, *predare*.
 careful, *attento*.
 caresses, *carezze*.
 carpet, *tappeto*.
 carriage, *carrozza*.
 carry, to —, *portare*.
 castle, *castello*.
 cat, *gatto*.
 cause, *ragione*.
 cave, *grotta*.
 cease, to —, *cessare*.

celebrate, to —, *celebrare*.
 cemetery, *cimitero*.
 century, *secolo*.
 certainly, *certamente*.
 Ceylon, *Ceylan*.
 chair, *sedia*.
 Charles, *Carlo*.
 charming, *vezzoso*.
 cheese, *formaggio*.
 cherish, to —, *prediligere*.
 cherry, *ciriegia*.
 child, *ragazzo*.
 China, *la Cina*.
 chocolate, *cioccolata*.
 church, *chiesa*.
 city, *città*.
 clever, *abile*.
 cleverness, *abilità*.
 cliff, *rupe*.
 cloak, *mantello*.
 coat, *abito*.
 coffee, *caffè*.
 cold, *raffreddore*.
 colour, *colore*.
 command, *comando*; to —, *comandare*.
 commence, to —, *cominciare*.
 commit, *commettere*.
 companion, *compagno*.
 complain, to —, *querelarsi*.
 compromise, to —, *compromettere*.
 concern, to —, *toccare*.
 concert, *concerto*.
 confess, to —, *confessare*.
 confidence, *confidenza*.
 Constance, *Costanza*.
 contemporary, *contemporaneo*.
 contents, *contenuto*.
 continent, *continente*.
 contradict, to —, *contraddire*.
 convince, to —, *convincere*.
 cooked, *cotto*.
 cornet, *corno*.
 correspond, to —, *corrispondere*.
 corrupt, *corrompere*.
 Corsica, *la Corsica*.

cough, to —, *tossire*.
 country, *campagna, paese*.
 cousin { *cugina* (f.).
 { *cugino* (m.).
 cover, *coperchio*.
 cow, *vacca*.
 coward, *poltrone*.
 creep, to —, *strisciare*.
 crowd, *folla*.
 cruel, *crudele*.
 cry, to —, *piangere*.
 cup, *tazza*.
 cupboard, *dispensa*.

D.

dance, to —, *ballare*.
 dangerous, *pericoloso*.
 dare, to —, *aver cuore*.
 darkness, *ténèbre*.
 darling, *carino*.
 date, *data*.
 daughter, *figlia*.
 day, *giorno*.
 dead, *morto*.
 dear, *caro*.
 death, *morte*.
 debt, *débito*.
 December, *Decembre*.
 deed, *azione*.
 Denmark, *la Danimarca*.
 depart, to —, *partire*.
 departure, *partenza*.
 depose, to —, *deporre*.
 deserve, to —, *meritare*.
 desire, to —, *desiderare*.
 destroy, to —, *distruggere*.
 die, to —, *morire*.
 diligence, *diligenza*.
 dining-room, *stanza da mangiare*.
 dinner, *pranzo*.
 dirty, *sudicio*.
 discipline, *disciplina*.
 discourse, to —, *discorrere*.
 discuss, to —, *discutere*.
 disgrace, *disonore*.

- dish, *piatto*.
dishonest, *inonesto*.
dismiss, to —, *dimettere, mandar via*.
disobedience, *disubbidienza*.
disobedient, *disobbediente*.
distance, *distanza*.
distinguish, to —, *distinguere*.
divide, to —, *partire, dividere*.
do, to —, *fare*.
doctor, *dottore, medico*.
dog, *cane*.
doll, *bambola*.
dominion, *dominio*.
done, *fatto*.
door, *porta,uscio*.
doubt, to —, *dubitare*.
drawing-room, *sala*.
dress, *abito*.
drink, to —, *bévere*.
dry, *secco*.
duchess, *duchessa*.
duke, *duca*.
during, *durante*.
dust, *polvere*.
duty, *dovere*.
enjoy, to —, *godere*.
enough, *abbastanza*.
enrich, to —, *arricchire*.
enter, to —, *entrare*.
equivalent, to be —, *equivalere*.
erect, *erigere*.
even, *pure*.
evening, *sera*.
eventually, *eventualmente*.
ever, *mai*.
every, *ogni*.
everyone, *ognuno*.
everywhere, *da per tutto, dovunque*.
excellent, *eccellente*.
except, *eccetto*.
excite, to —, *impellere*.
excuse, *scusa*; to —, *scusare*.
exhaust, to —, *esaurire*.
exhibition, *esposizione*.
expand, to —, *dilatare*.
expect, to —, *attendarsi*.
expel, to —, *espellere*.
extinguish, to —, *estinguere*.
eye, *occhio*.

E.

- each, *ogni*.
ear, *orecchio*.
ear-ring, *orecchino*.
earth, the ground, *terra*.
easily, *facilmente*.
eat, to —, *mangiare*.
ebony, *ébano*.
egg, *uovo* m., pl. *le uova*.
Elba, *l'Elba*.
elephant, *elefante*.
embark, to —, *imbarcarsi*.
emerge, to —, *emérgere*.
emperor, *imperatore*.
end, *fine*; to —, *finire*.
ended, *finito, passato*.
enemy, *nemico*.
England, *l'Inghilterra*.

F.

- fable, *favola*.
faded, *sfiarito*.
fail, to —, *mancare*.
fall, to —, *cadere*; the —, *caduta*.
family, *famiglia*.
famous, *famoso*.
fan, *ventaglio*.
farmer, *fattore, fittaiuolo*.
father, *padre*.
fault, *colpa*.
fear, to —, *temere*.
February, *Febbraio*.
feel, to —, *sentire, sentirsi*.
fever, *febbre*.
few, *alcuno, pochi*.
fig, *fico*.
fight, to —, *combattere*.
find, to —, *trovare*.

finger, *dito* m., pl. *le dita*.
 finish, to —, *finire*.
 fire, *fuoco*, *incendio*.
 firewood, *legna*.
 firing, *sparare*.
 fish, *pesce*.
 five, *cinque*.
 flight, *fuga*.
 Florence, *Firenze*.
 flower, *fiore*.
 follow, to —, *seguire*.
 foolish, *sciocco*.
 for, *per*, *poiché*.
 foresee, to —, *prevedere*.
 forget, to —, *dimenticarsi*.
 fork, *forchetta*.
 fortress, *fortino*.
 fortune, *fortuna*.
 four, *quattro*.
 franc, *franco*.
 France, *la Francia*.
 Frances, *Francesca*.
 Francis, *Francesco*.
 free, to —, *liberare*.
 freeze, to —, *gelare*.
 French, *Francesco*.
 fresh, *fresco*.
 Friday, *Venerdì*.
 friend, *amico* (m.), *amica* (f.).
 friendly, *amichévole*.
 fruit, *frutto*.
 funeral, *esequie*, *funerale*.
 furniture, *masserizie*, *mobili*.

G.

garden, *giardino*.
 gardener, *giardiniere*.
 gas, *gas*.
 gate, *cancello*.
 gathered, *raccolto*.
 general, *generale*.
 generally, *generalmente*.
 generosity, *generosità*.
 generous, *generoso*.
 George, *Giorgio*.

geranium, *geranio*.
 Germany, *la Germania*.
 girl, *ragazza*.
 give, to —, *dare*.
 given, *dato*.
 glass, *bicchiere*.
 glove, *guanto*.
 go, to —, *andare*.
 gold, *oro*.
 gone, *andato*.
 good, *buono*.
 gooseberry, *ribes*.
 govern, to —, *governare*.
 grandfather, *avolo*, *nonno*.
 grandmother, *avola*.
 grape, *uva*.
 grass, *erba*.
 grateful, *grato*.
 great, *maggiore*, *grande*.
 Greece, *Grecia*.
 gropingly, *tastone*.
 ground, *terra*.
 grow, *creocere*.
 gun, *fucile*.

H.

Hague, the, *l'Aia*.
 hail, to —, *grandinare*.
 half, *mezzo*.
 hall, *sala*.
 hand, *mano* (f.).
 happen, to —, *accadere*, *avvenire*.
 happy, *felice*.
 hardly, *appena*.
 haste, *fretta*.
 hat, *cappello*.
 he, *egli*, *esso*.
 head, *testa*.
 hear, to —, *udire*.
 heat, *calore*.
 heavy, *pesante*.
 help! *aiuto!*
 help, to —, *aiutare*, *sovvenire*.
 here, *qui*.
 here is, here are, *ecco*.
 hesitate, to —, *esitare*.

hide, to —, *nascóndere*.
 high, *alto*.
 higher, *superiore*.
 hill, *colle*.
 holiday, *giorno di vacanza*.
 holidays, *vacanze*.
 home, *casa*.
 honest, *onesto*.
 honour, the —, *onore*; to —, *onorare*.
 hope, to —, *sperare*.
 horn, *corno*.
 horse, *cavallo*.
 hospital, *ospedale*.
 hotel, *albergo*.
 hour, *ora*.
 house, *casa*.
 however, *pure, però*.
 Humbert, *Umberto*.
 hundred, *centinaio* m., pl. *le centinaia*.
 hurrah! *viva!*
 hurt, to —, *nuocere*.

Italy, *l'Italia*.
 Italian, *Italiano*.
 it, she, *essa*.
 it, he, *esso*.
 ivory, *avorio*.

J.

James, *Giàcomo*.
 Jane, *Giovanna*.
 January, *Gennaio*.
 Japan, *Giappone*.
 jewel, *gioiello*.
 John, *Giovanni*.
 joiner, *falegname*.
 journey, *viaggio*.
 judge, *giudice*.
 Julia, *Giulia*.
 July, *Luglio*.
 June, *Giugno*.
 just, *giusto*.

K.

I.

ice, *ghiaccio*.
 Iceland, *l'Islanda*.
 if, *se*.
 ill, *ammalato*.
 illness, *malattia*.
 I like, I love, *io amo*.
 immediately, *subito*.
 impolite, *scortese*.
 income, *rendita*.
 increase, to —, *accrescere*.
 industrious, *industrioso*.
 ink, *inchiostro*.
 inkstand, *calamaio*.
 inn, *osteria*.
 innocent, *innocente*.
 inside, *dentro*.
 intend, *intendere*.
 invade, to —, *invadere*.
 Ireland, *l'Irlanda*.
 island, *isola*.

keep, to —, *tenere*.
 key, *chiave*.
 killed, *ucciso*.
 kind, *gentile*.
 kindly, *con gentilezza*.
 king, *re*.
 kitchen, *cucina*.
 knee, *ginocchio* m., pl. *le ginocchia*.
 knife, *coltello*.
 know, to —, *conoscere*.

L.

ladder, *scala portatile*.
 lady, *signora*.
 lamb, *agnello*.
 lamp, *lampada*.
 language, *lingua*.
 lantern, *lanterna*.
 large, *grande*.

last, *ultimo, scorso*.
 last night, *la notte scorsa*.
 Latin, *Latino*.
 laugh, to —, *ridere*.
 laughter, *riso*.
 lawn, *pratellino*.
 lawyer, *avvocato*.
 lazy, *ozioso*.
 lead, to —, *condurre*.
 leaf, *foglia*.
 learn, to —, *imparare*.
 leather, *pelle*.
 leave, to —, *lasciare*.
 leg, *gamba*.
 lemon, *limone*.
 lend, to —, *prestare*.
 lesser, *minore*.
 lesson, *lezione*.
 letter, *lettera*.
 library, *libreria*.
 lighten, to —, *lampeggiare*.
 lily, *giglio*.
 limb, *membro*.
 lion, *leone*.
 lip, *labbro* m., pl. *le labbra*.
 listen, to —, *ascoltare*.
 little, *piccolo*.
 load, *soma*.
 London, *Londra*.
 look, to —, *guardare*.
 looking-glass, *specchio*.
 long, *lungo*.
 lose, to —, *perdere*.
 loudly, *forte*.
 Louisa, *Luisa*.
 love (the), *amore*; to —, *amare*.
 low, *basso*.
 lower, *inferiore*.
 loyalty, *fedeltà*.
 luggage, *bagaglio*.

M.

madam, *signora*.
 made, *fatto*.
 magician, *magico*.

magnificent, *superbo*.
 man, *uomo*.
 many, *molti*.
 March, *Marzo*.
 Margaret, *Margherita*.
 market, *mercato*.
 Mary, *Maria*.
 marry, to —, *sposarsi, maritarsi, ammogliarsi*.
 master, *maestro, padrone*.
 match, *zolfanello*.
 matter, *quistione*.
 May, *Maggio*.
 mayor, *sindaco*.
 meadow, *prato*.
 means, *mezzo*.
 meat, *carne*.
 medicine, *medicina*.
 meet, to —, *incontrare*.
 member, *membro*.
 memory, *memoria*.
 merchant, *negoziante*.
 message, *messaggio*.
 Milan, *Milano*.
 mile, *miglio* m., pl. *le miglia*.
 milk, *latte*.
 mill, *mulino*.
 mind, *cervello*.
 misfortune, *disgrazia*.
 mistake, *errore, sbaglio*.
 mistress, *padrona*.
 mock, to —, *burlarsi*.
 Monday, *Lunedì*.
 money, *danaro*.
 monkey, *scimmia*.
 month, *mese*.
 monument, *monumento*.
 morning (this), *stan mattina*.
 mother, *madre*.
 motor-car, *automobile*.
 mountain, *monte*.
 mouse, *sorcio*.
 moustache, *buffi, mostacchi*.
 move, to —, *muovere*.
 much, *molto*.
 muddy, *fangoso*.
 muff, *manicotto*.

museum, *museo*.
music, *música*.
musician, *musicante*.

N.

name, *nome*.
Naples, *Nàpoli*.
Napoleon, *Napoleone*.
narrate, to —, *narrare*.
naughty, *cattivo*.
near, *vicino a, presso*.
nearest, *próssimo*.
nearly, *quasi*.
necklace, *vezzo, collana*.
needle, *ago*.
neighbour, *próssimo, il vicino*.
neither, *nè*.
nephew, *nipote*.
nest, *nido*.
never, *mai, giammai*.
nevertheless, *tuttavia*.
new, *nuovo*.
Newfoundland, *Terranuova*.
news, *nuove*.
newspaper, *giornale*.
next week, *la settimana próssima*.
nicely, *bellamente*.
niece, *nipote*.
no, *no*.
nobody, *niuno*.
noise, *rumore*.
none, *niuno*.
nor, *nè*.
Norway, *la Norvegia*.
not, *non*.
note, *biglietto*.
nothing, *nulla*.
notwithstanding, *a dispetto di, ad onta, nonostante*.
November, *Novembre*.
now, *ora, adesso*.
nuptials, *nozze*.

O.

oar, *remo*.
obedient, *ubbidiente*.

obey, to —, *ubbidire*.
oblige, to —, *obbligare*.
obtain, to —, *ottenere*.
October, *Ottobre*.
offended, *offeso*.
offend, to —, *offendere*.
office, *gabinetto, officio*.
often, *sovente, spesso*.
old, *vecchio*.
omit, to —, *omèttete*.
omnibus, *omnibus*.
on, *su*.
once, *una volta*.
one, *uno*.
only, *soltanto, solamente*.
open, to —, *aprire*.
openly, *apertamente*.
opera, *opera*.
opinion, *opinione*.
opposite, *dirimpetto a*.
oppress, to —, *opprimere*.
or, *o*.
orange, *arancia*.
orchard (of apples), *pometo*.
oven, *forno*.
overcoat, *soprabito*.
ox, *bue*.

P.

packet, *involto*.
page, *página*.
paint, to —, *dip'ingere*.
painter, *pittore* (m.).
painting (the), *quadro, pittura*.
pair, *paio m., pl. le paio*.
palace, *palazzo*.
pantry, *dispensa*.
paper, *carta*.
pardon, to —, *perdonare*.
parents, *genitori*.
Paris, *Parigi*.
park, *parco*.
passage (the), *il passaggio*.
past, *passato, scorso*.
patience, *pazienza*.
patient, *malato*.

Paul, *Paolo*.
 pavement, *pavimento*.
 pay, to —, *pagare*.
 peach, *pesca*.
 pear, *pera*.
 pearl, *perla*.
 pen, *penna*.
 pencil, *lapis*.
 penny, *soldo*.
 people, *gente*. •
 perceive, to —, *accorgersi*.
 perfect, *perfetto*.
 perhaps, *forse*.
 permit, to —, *permettere*.
 person, *persona*.
 persist, to —, *persistere*.
 Peter, *Pietro*.
 Petrarch, *il Petrarca*.
 piano, *pianoforte*.
 picture, *pittura*.
 piece, *tozzo*.
 pin, *spilla*.
 pinions, *vanni*.
 pity, to —, *compiangere*.
 please, *se volete* or *di grazia*.
 pleased, *contento*.
 pleasant, *dolce, buono, piacevole*.
 plate, *piatto*.
 play, to —, *divertirsi, suonare*
 (music), *giocare* (a game).
 poem, *poema*.
 poet, *poeta*.
 poetry, *poesia*.
 poisoned, *avvelenato*.
 policeman, *poliziotto*.
 Portugal, *il Portogallo*.
 possibly, *possibilmente*.
 post, to —, *mettere alla posta*.
 posterity, *posterità*.
 post-office, *l'ufficio della posta*.
 postage, stamp, *francobollo*.
 pound (sterling), *lira sterlina*.
 praise (the), *la lode*; to —, *lodare*.
 prefer, to —, *preferire*.
 present, *regalo*.
 presently, *or ora*.
 president, *presidente*.

pretty, *bello*.
 priest, *prete*.
 prince, *principe*.
 prisoner, *prigione*.
 prize, *premio*.
 probably, *probabilmente*.
 procession, *processione*.
 produce, to —, *produrre*.
 promise, the —, *promessa*; to —,
promettere.
 pronounce, to —, *pronunciare*.
 property, *proprietà*.
 protect, to —, *proteggere*.
 proud, *superbo*.
 provided, *purchè*.
 provident, *avveduto*.
 provisions, *viveri*.
 punish, to —, *punire*.
 punishment, *punizione, pena*.
 pupil, *allievo* (m.), *allieva* (f.).
 purposely, *a bello studio*.
 purse, *borsa*.
 pursue, to —, *seguire*.
 put, *messo*.

Q.

quack, *medicastro*.
 queen, *regina*.
 question, *quistione*.
 quickly, *presto*.
 quiet, *quieto*.
 quietly, *tranquillamente*.
 quite, *tutto*.

R.

railway, *ferrovia*.
 rain, *pioggia*; to —, *piovere*.
 rampart, *riparo*.
 read, to —, *leggere*.
 reason, *ragione*.
 recently, *recentemente*.
 receive, to, —, *ricevere*.
 recognise, to —, *riconoscere*.
 red, *rosso*.
 reflect, *riflettere*.

regret, to —, *rincrescere*.
 rejoice, to —, *rallegrarsi*.
 relight, to —, *riaccendere*.
 remain, to —, *rimanere*.
 remember, to —, *avere a cuente*.
 remit, to —, *rimettere*.
 rend, to —, *sdrucire*.
 repent, to —, *pentirsi*.
 reply, *rispondere*.
 representation (play), *rappresentazione*.
 report, *ragguaglio*.
 repulse, *ripellere*.
 rescue, to —, *riscuotere*.
 resist, to —, *resistere*.
 resolve, to —, *risolvere*.
 resource, *mezzo*.
 rest, to —, *riposarsi*.
 result, *frutto*.
 retake, to —, *reprendere*.
 return, to —, *ritornare*.
 review, *rivista*.
 reward, *ricompensa*; to *ricompensare*.
 ribbon, *nastro*.
 rice, *riso*.
 ring, *anello*.
 rise, to —, *levarsi*.
 river, *fiume*.
 roar, *ruggire*.
 Rome, *Roma*.
 Roman, *Romano*.
 roof, *tetto*.
 room, *cámara*.
 rose, *rosa*.
 rudeness, *inciviltà*.
 rug, *coperta*.

S.

sack, *sacco*.
 saddle, *sella*.
 said, *detto*.
 sailor, *marinaro*.
 Saint Helena, *Sant' Elena*.
 salt, *sale*.
 same, *stesso, medesimo*.

Sardinia, *la Sardegna*.
 Saturday, *Sabato*.
 savour, *sapore*.
 says, *dice*.
 school, *scuola*.
 scissors, *forbici*.
 scolding, *riprensione*.
 season, *stagione*.
 see, to —, *vedere*.
 seed, *seme*.
 seek, to —, *cercare*.
 seem, to —, *sembrare, parere*.
 seen, *veduto, visto*.
 sell, to —, *vendere*.
 send, to —, *mandare*.
 September, *Settembre*.
 servant, *serva* (f.).
 seven, *sette*.
 several, *parecchi*.
 severe, *severo*.
 severely, *severamente*.
 sew, to —, *cucire*.
 shawl, *sciallo*.
 she, *ella, essa*.
 sheet, *foglio*.
 shilling, *scellino*.
 ship, *legno*.
 shipwreck, to —, *naufragare*.
 shop, *bottega*.
 shopkeeper, *bottegaio*.
 short, *breve*.
 show, to —, *mostrare*.
 Sicily, *la Sicilia*.
 sideboard, *buffetto*.
 silk, *seta*.
 silly, *sciocco, sêmplice*.
 silver, *argento*.
 since, *da, poichè*.
 singer, *cantante*.
 sir, *signore*.
 sister, *sorella*.
 sister-in-law, *cognata*.
 sitting-room, *salottino*.
 six, *sei*.
 skate, to —, *pattinare*.
 slander, to —, *diffamare*.
 slate, *lavagna*.

small, *piccolo*.
 snow, *neve*; to —, *nevicare*.
 so, *così*, *sì*, *dunque*.
 society, *società*.
 soldier, *soldato*.
 solve, to —, *solvere*.
 some, *certo*, *alquanto*, *qualche*,
 alcuno.
 somebody, *qualcuno*, *taluno*.
 some one, *qualcuno*.
 sometimes, *alcune volte*, *tal-*
 volta.
 song, *canzone*.
 son, *figlio*.
 soon, *tosto*.
 soul, *anima*.
 sour, *acrc*.
 sow, to —, *seminare*.
 Spain, *La Spagna*.
 speak, to —, *parlare*.
 spend, to —, *spendere*.
 spices, *spezie*.
 spring, *sorgente*.
 spring, the —, *primavera*.
 sprinkle, to —, *sprizzare*.
 spy, to —, *spiare*.
 stable, *stalla*.
 staircase, *scalinata*.
 stairs, *scale*.
 stamp (postage), *francobollo*.
 start, to —, *partire*.
 statue, *statua*.
 steal, to —, *rubare*.
 stealthily, *appiattatamente*.
 steel, *acciaio*.
 stick, *bastone*.
 still, *ancora*.
 stone, *sasso*.
 storm, *tempesta*.
 story, *storia*.
 strawberry, *frágola*.
 street, *strada*, *contrada*.
 strong, *forte*.
 studio, *studio*.
 subject (of a sovereign), *sù-*
 dito.
 subject (abstract), *soggetto*.

submit, to —, *sommettere*.
 succeed, to —, *succedere*.
 successful, *fortunato*.
 such, *tale*, *cotale*.
 sugar, *zucchero*.
 suit (law), *lite*.
 summer, *està*.
 Sunday, *Doménica*.
 supply, to —, *supplire*.
 surrender, to —, *arrèndersi*.
 survive, to —, *sopravvivere*.
 swallow, to —, *inghiottire*.
 Sweden, *la Svezia*.
 sweet, *dolce*.
 sweetmeats, *dolci*.
 Switzerland, *la Svizzera*.

T.

table, *tàvola*.
 table-cloth, *tovaglia*.
 take, to —, *prendere*, *predare*.
 talk, to —, *parlare*, *discorrere*.
 tall, *grande*.
 tart, *focaccia*.
 task, *còmpito*.
 Tasso, *il Tasso*.
 tea, *tè*.
 teach, to —, *insegnare*.
 tear, to —, *sdrucire*.
 tell, to —, *dire*.
 temptation, *tentazione*.
 ten, *dieci*.
 tennis, *la palla a corda*.
 thanks, *grazie*.
 thaw, to —, *didiacciare*.
 theatre, *teatro*.
 theft, *latrocinio*.
 then, *allora*.
 there, *là*, *ci*, *vi*.
 therefore, *dunque*, *perciò*.
 they, *eglino*, *essi* (m.); *elleno*,
 esse (f.).
 thief, *ladro*.
 thimble, *ditale*.
 think, to —, *pensare*, *crèdere*.
 thirteen, *tredici*.

thirty, *trenta*.
 this, *questo*.
 thousand, *migliaio* m., pl. *le migliaia*.
 thread, *filo*.
 three, *tre*.
 thumb, *pòlice*.
 thunder, to —, *tuonare*.
 Thursday, *Giovedì*.
 ticket, *biglietto*.
 tiger, *tigre*.
 time, *volta*, *tempo*.
 tired, *stanco*.
 to-day, *oggi*.
 together, *insieme*.
 told, *detto*.
 to-morrow, *domani*.
 tongs, *molle*.
 to-night, *stanotte*.
 too, *troppo*.
 toothache, *mal di denti*.
 top, *sommità*.
 towards, *verso*.
 towel, *tovaglia*.
 train, *convoglio*.
 traitor, *traditore*.
 traitress, *traditora*.
 translate, to —, *tradurre*.
 transmit, to —, *trasmettere*.
 trap, *trappola*.
 traveller, *viaggiatore*.
 tree, *albero*.
 trespasser, *trasgressore*.
 trouble, *pena*.
 trousers, *calzoni*.
 true, *vero*.
 trunk, *baule*.
 trust, to —, *fidarsi*.
 truth, *verità*.
 try, to —, *assaggiare*, *tentare*, *cercare*.
 Tuesday, *Martedì*.
 Turkey, *Turchia*.
 twelve, *dodici*.
 twenty, *venti*.
 twice, *due volte*.
 two, *due*.

U.

umbrella, *ombrello*.
 uncle, *zio*.
 under, *sotto*.
 undertake, *intraprendere*.
 undertaking, *impresa*.
 unfortunate, *sfortunato*.
 ungrateful, *ingrato*.
 unhappy, *infelice*.
 United States, *Stati Uniti*.
 until, *sino a*, *fino a tanto che*.
 unwillingly, *di mala voglia*.
 up, *su*.
 upon, *sopra*.
 uproot, to —, *svellere*.

V.

valuable, *di valore*.
 vase, *vaso*.
 Venice, *Venezia*.
 verse, *verso*.
 very, *assai*, *molto*.
 violet, *viola*.
 visit, to —, *visitare*.
 voyage, *viaggio*.

W.

wait, to —, *aspettare*.
 walk, the —, *la passeggiata*, *camminata*; to —, *camminare*, *andare a piedi*.
 wall, *muro* m., pl. *le mura*.
 walnut, *noce*.
 want, to —, *volere*, *desiderare*.
 war, *guerra*.
 warehouse, *magazzino*.
 watch, *orologio*.
 watchmaker, *oriolaio*.
 water, *acqua*.
 way (the), *via*.
 weak, *débole*.
 wealth, *ricchezza*.

wear, to —, *portare*.
 weather, *tempo*.
 Wednesday, *Mercoledì*.
 week, *settimana*.
 what, *che*.
 when, *quando*.
 whence, *onde, donde*.
 where, *dove, ove*.
 whether, *se*.
 which, *quale, che*.
 whilst, *mentrechè*.
 whip, *frusta*.
 whiskers, *basette*.
 white, *bianco*.
 who, *che, chi*.
 whosoever, *chiunque*.
 why, *perchè*.
 wide, *largo*.
 wife, *moglie*.
 willingly, *volentieri*.
 wind, *vento*.
 window, *finestra*.

wine, *vino*.
 winter, *inverno*.
 wish, to —, *desiderare*.
 wither, to —, *avvizzire*.
 within, *entro*.
 without, *senza*.
 woman, *donna*.
 wood, *legno, bosco*.
 word, *parola*.
 work, *lavoro*; to —, *lavorare*.
 world, *mondo*.
 wounded, *ferito*.
 write, to —, *scrivere*.
 written, *scritto*.

Y.

year, *anno*.
 yes, *sì*.
 yesterday, *ieri*.
 yet, *ancora, pure*.

THE END.

Crown 8vo, Cloth, 3s. 6d. each; some vols., 6s.

THE CONTEMPORARY SCIENCE SERIES.

EDITED BY HAVELOCK ELLIS.

Illustrated Volumes containing between 300 and 400 pp.

- EVOLUTION OF SEX. By Professors GEDDES and THOMSON. 6s.
ELECTRICITY IN MODERN LIFE. By G. W. DE TUNZELMANN.
THE ORIGIN OF THE ARYANS. By Dr. TAYLOR.
PHYSIOGNOMY AND EXPRESSION. By P. MANTEGAZZA.
EVOLUTION AND DISEASE. By J. B. SUTTON.
THE VILLAGE COMMUNITY. By G. L. GOMME.
THE CRIMINAL. By HAVELOCK ELLIS. New Edition. 6s.
SANITY AND INSANITY. By Dr. C. MERCIER.
HYPNOTISM. By Dr. ALBERT MOLL (Berlin).
MANUAL TRAINING. By Dr. WOODWARD (St. Louis).
SCIENCE OF FAIRY TALES. By E. S. HARTLAND.
PRIMITIVE FOLK. By ELIE RECLUS.
EVOLUTION OF MARRIAGE. By CH. LETOURNEAU.
BACTERIA AND THEIR PRODUCTS. By Dr. WOODHEAD.
EDUCATION AND HEREDITY. By J. M. GUYAU.
THE MAN OF GENIUS. By Prof. LOMBROSO.
PROPERTY: ITS ORIGIN. By CH. LETOURNEAU.
VOLCANOES PAST AND PRESENT. By Prof. HULL.
PUBLIC HEALTH PROBLEMS. By Dr. J. F. SYKES.
MODERN METEOROLOGY. By FRANK WALDO, Ph.D.
THE GERM-PLASM. By Professor WEISMANN. 6s.
THE INDUSTRIES OF ANIMALS. By F. HOUSSAY.
MAN AND WOMAN. By HAVELOCK ELLIS. 6s.
MODERN CAPITALISM. By JOHN A. HOBSON, M.A.
THOUGHT-TRANSFERENCE. By F. PODMORE, M.A.
COMPARATIVE PSYCHOLOGY. By Prof. C. L. MORGAN, F.R.S. 6s.
THE ORIGINS OF INVENTION. By O. T. MASON.
THE GROWTH OF THE BRAIN. By H. H. DONALDSON.
EVOLUTION IN ART. By Prof. A. C. HADDON, F.R.S.
HALLUCINATIONS AND ILLUSIONS. By E. PARISH. 6s.
PSYCHOLOGY OF THE EMOTIONS. By Prof. RIBOT. 6s.
THE NEW PSYCHOLOGY. By Dr. E. W. SCRIPTURE. 6s.
SLEEP: ITS PHYSIOLOGY, PATHOLOGY, HYGIENE, AND PSYCHOLOGY.
By MARIE DE MANACÉINE.
THE NATURAL HISTORY OF DIGESTION. By A. LOCKHART
GILLESPIE, M.D., F.R.C.P. Ed., F.R.S. Ed. 6s.
DEGENERACY: ITS CAUSES, SIGNS, AND RESULTS. By Prof.
EUGENE S. TALBOT, M.D., Chicago. 6s.
THE HISTORY OF THE EUROPEAN FAUNA. By R. F.
SCHARFF, B.Sc., Ph.D., F.Z.S. 6s.
THE RACES OF MAN: A SKETCH OF ETHNOGRAPHY AND ANTHRO-
POLOGY. By J. DENIKER. 6s.
THE PSYCHOLOGY OF RELIGION. By Prof. STARBUCK. 6s.
THE CHILD. By ALEXANDER FRANCIS CHAMBERLAIN, M.A., Ph.D. 6s.
THE MEDITERRANEAN RACE. By Prof. SERGI. 6s.
THE STUDY OF RELIGION. By MORRIS JASTROW, Jun., Ph.D. 6s.
HISTORY OF GEOLOGY AND PALÆONTOLOGY. By Prof.
KARL ALFRED VON ZITTEL, Munich. 6s.
THE MAKING OF CITIZENS: A STUDY IN COMPARATIVE EDUCA-
TION. By R. E. HUGHES, M.A. 6s.
MORALS: A TREATISE ON THE PSYCHO-SOCIOLOGICAL BASES OF
ETHICS. By Prof. G. L. DUPRAT. 6s.
A STUDY OF RECENT EARTHQUAKES. By CHAS. DAVISON,
D.Sc., F.G.S. 6s.

The Music Story Series.

A SERIES OF LITERARY-MUSICAL MONOGRAPHS.

Edited by FREDERICK J. CROWEST,

Author of "The Great Tone Poets."

Illustrated with Photogravure and Collotype Portraits, Half-tone and Line Pictures, Facsimiles, etc.

Square Crown 8vo, Cloth, 3s. 6d. net.

VOLUMES NOW READY.

THE STORY OF ORATORIO. By ANNIE W. PATTERSON, B.A., Mus. Doc.

"Written in a bright style, in which technicalities are as much as possible avoided, Miss Patterson's monograph should find favour with the musical public."—*Scotsman*.

THE STORY OF NOTATION. By C. F. ABDY WILLIAMS, M.A., Mus. Bac.

THE STORY OF THE ORGAN. By C. F. ABDY WILLIAMS, M.A., Author of "Bach" and "Handel" ("Master Musicians' Series").

THE STORY OF CHAMBER MUSIC. By N. KILBURN, Mus. BAC. (Cantab.), Conductor of the Middlesbrough, Sunderland, and Bishop Auckland Musical Societies.

THE STORY OF THE VIOLIN. By PAUL STOEVIING, Professor of the Violin, Guildhall School of Music, London.

IN PREPARATION.

THE STORY OF THE PIANOFORTE. By ALGERNON S. ROSE, Author of "Talks with Bandsmen."

THE STORY OF HARMONY. By EUSTACE J. BREAKSPEARE, Author of "Mozart," "Musical Aesthetics," etc.

THE STORY OF THE ORCHESTRA. By STEWART MACPHERSON, Fellow and Professor, Royal Academy of Music.

THE STORY OF BIBLE MUSIC. By ELEONORE D'ESTERRE-KEELING, Author of "The Musicians' Birthday Book."

THE STORY OF CHURCH MUSIC. By THE EDITOR.
ETC., ETC., ETC.

THE WALTER SCOTT PUBLISHING COMPANY, LIMITED,
LONDON AND NEWCASTLE-ON-TYNE.

The Makers of British Art.

A NEW SERIES OF MONOGRAPHS OF BRITISH ARTISTS.

Each volume illustrated with Twenty Full-page Reproductions
and a Photogravure Portrait.

Square Crown 8vo, Cloth, Gilt Top, Deckled Edges, 3s. 6d. net.

VOLUMES READY.

LANDSEER, SIR EDWIN. By the EDITOR.

"This little volume may rank as the most complete account of Landseer that the world is likely to possess."—*Times*.

REYNOLDS, SIR JOSHUA. By ELSA D'ESTERRE-KEELING.

"To the series entitled 'The Makers of British Art' Miss Elsa d'Esterre-Keeling contributes an admirable little volume on Sir Joshua Reynolds. Miss Keeling's style is sprightly and epigrammatic, and her judgments are well considered."—*Daily Telegraph*.

TURNER, J. M. W. By ROBERT CHIGNELL, Author of
"The Life and Paintings of Vicat Cole, R.A."

ROMNEY, GEORGE. By SIR HERBERT MAXWELL, Bart.,
F.R.S., M.P.

"Likely to remain the best account of the painter's life."—*Athenaeum*.

WILKIE, SIR DAVID. By Professor BAYNE.

CONSTABLE, JOHN. By the Right Hon. LORD WINDSOR.

RAEBURN, SIR HENRY. By EDWARD PINNINGTON.

GAINSBOROUGH, THOMAS. By A. B. FLETCHER.

HOGARTH, WILLIAM. By Prof. G. BALDWIN BROWN.

IN PREPARATION.

MILLAIS—LEIGHTON—HENRY MOORE—MORLAND.

THE WALTER SCOTT PUBLISHING COMPANY, LIMITED,
LONDON AND FELLING-ON-TYNE.

The Scott Library.

Maroon Cloth, Gilt. Price **1s.** net per Volume.

May also be had in the following Bindings:—Half-Morocco, gilt top, antique;
Red Roan, gilt edges, etc.

VOLUMES ALREADY ISSUED—

- | | |
|--|---|
| 58 ARISTOTLE'S ETHICS | 35 ENGLISH PROSE (Maundeville to Thackeray) |
| 71 ATHENIAN ORACLE, THE | 20 EPICTETUS, TEACHING OF |
| 104 AUGUSTINE, ST., CONFESSIONS OF | 18 FERRIS'S GREAT MUSICAL COMPOSERS |
| 88 BACON'S ESSAYS | 91 FROISSART, PASSAGES FROM |
| 62 BALZAC'S SHORTER STORIES | 121 FROUDE'S NEMESIS OF FAITH |
| 49 BRONTË'S JANE EYRE | 101 GOETHE'S MAXIMS, ETC. |
| 8 BROWNE'S RELIGIO MEDICI, ETC. | 87 GOGOL'S INSPECTOR-GENERAL |
| 30 BURNS'S LETTERS | 42 GOLDSMITH'S VICAR OF WAKEFIELD |
| 15 BYRON'S LETTERS | 56 GOSSE'S NORTHERN STUDIES |
| 48 CARLETON, TALES FROM | 39 HAZLITT, WILLIAM, ESSAYS OF |
| 83 CARLYLE'S MISCELLANEOUS ESSAYS | 93 HEINE IN ART AND LETTERS |
| 32 CARLYLE'S SARTOR RESARTUS | 27 HEINE, HEINRICH, PROSE WRITINGS OF |
| 47 CHESTERFIELD'S LETTERS | 74 HEINE'S ITALIAN TRAVEL SKETCHES |
| 109 CICERO, ORATIONS OF | 79 HELPS'S ESSAYS AND APHORISMS |
| 92 COLERIDGE, PROSE OF | 34 HERBERT'S, LORD, AUTOBIOGRAPHY |
| 14 CUNNINGHAM'S GREAT ENGLISH PAINTERS | 44 HOLMES' AUTOCRAT OF THE BREAKFAST-TABLE |
| 64 DARWIN'S CORAL-REEFS | 45 HOLMES' POET AT THE BREAKFAST-TABLE |
| 51 DAVIS, THOMAS, PROSE WRITINGS OF | 46 HOLMES' PROFESSOR AT THE BREAKFAST-TABLE |
| 25 DEFOE'S CAPTAIN SINGLETON | 16 HUNT, LEIGH, ESSAYS BY |
| 63 DE MUSSET'S COMEDIES | 36 IBSEN'S PILLARS OF SOCIETY |
| 5 DE QUINCEY'S CONFESSIONS | 37 IRISH FAIRY AND FOLK TALES |
| 94 DE QUINCEY'S ESSAYS | 69 JERROLD, DOUGLAS, PAPERS |
| 116 DESCARTES' DISCOURSE ON METHOD | 38 JOHNSON'S, DR., ESSAYS |
| 67 DICKENS'S MASTER HUMPHREY'S CLOCK, ETC. | 117 KĀLIDASĀ'S SAKUNTALĀ |
| 57 EARLY WRITERS OF GREAT WRITERS | 61 LAMB'S ESSAYS OF ELIA |
| 50 ELIZABETHAN ENGLAND | 84 LAMB'S PLAYS AND DRAMATIC ESSAYS |
| 77 ELLIS'S NEW SPIRIT | |
| 35 EMERSON, SELECT WRITINGS OF | |
| 55 ENGLISH FAIRY AND FOLK TALES | |

THE WALTER SCOTT PUBLISHING COMPANY, LIMITED,
LONDON AND FELLING-ON-TYNE.

The Scott Library—*continued.*

- | | |
|--|--|
| <p>6 LANDOR'S IMAGINARY CONVERSATIONS</p> <p>40 LANDOR'S PENTAMERON, &c.</p> <p>59 LANDOR'S PERICLES AND ASPASIA</p> <p>86 LEOPARDI'S THOUGHTS AND DIALOGUES</p> <p>96 LESSING'S LAOCOON, AND OTHER WRITINGS</p> <p>99 LESSING'S NATHAN THE WISE</p> <p>105 LEWES'S, G. H., PRINCIPLES OF SUCCESS IN LITERATURE</p> <p>17 LONGFELLOW'S PROSE</p> <p>12 LOWELL'S ESSAYS ON ENGLISH POETS</p> <p>13 LOWELL'S BIGLOW PAPERS</p> <p>11 LOWELL'S MY STUDY WINDOWS</p> <p>97 MAETERLINCK, PLAYS OF</p> <p>1 MALORY'S KING ARTHUR</p> <p>78 MALORY'S MARVELLOUS ADVENTURES</p> <p>19 MARCUS AURELIUS, MEDITATIONS OF</p> <p>26 MAZZINI'S ESSAYS—POLITICAL, Etc.</p> <p>115 MILL'S LIBERTY</p> <p>89 MILTON, PROSE OF</p> <p>66 MITFORD'S OUR VILLAGE</p> <p>80 MONTAIGNE, ESSAYS OF</p> <p>53 MORE'S UTOPIA AND
• EDWARD V.</p> <p>31 MORRIS'S VOLSUNGS AND NIBLUNGS</p> <p>119 NEWMAN'S SELECT ESSAYS</p> <p>118 NEWMAN'S UNIVERSITY SKETCHES</p> <p>113 PASCAL, BLAISE, SELECT THOUGHTS OF</p> <p>73 PLATO, SELECTIONS FROM</p> <p>90 PLATO'S REPUBLIC</p> <p>• 7 PLUTARCH'S LIVES</p> <p>111 PLINY'S LETTERS—SERIES I.</p> <p>112 PLINY'S LETTERS—SERIES II.</p> <p>41 POE'S TALES AND ESSAYS</p> <p>107 POLITICAL ECONOMY SELECTIONS</p> <p>43 POLITICAL ORATIONS</p> | <p>110 REFLECTIONS ON THE REVOLUTION IN FRANCE.</p> <p>103 RENAN'S LIFE OF JESUS</p> <p>108 RENAN'S ANTICHRIST</p> <p>120 RENAN'S MARCUS AURELIUS</p> <p>190 RENAN'S POETRY OF CELTIC RACES, Etc.</p> <p>28 REYNOLDS'S, SIR JOSHUA, DISCOURSES</p> <p>54 SADI: GULISTAN; OR, FLOWER GARDEN</p> <p>72 SAINTE-BEUVE, ESSAYS OF</p> <p>75 SCHILLER'S MAID OF ORLEANS</p> <p>82 SCHILLER'S WILLIAM TELL</p> <p>102 SCHOPENHAUER</p> <p>114 SCOTS ESSAYISTS</p> <p>21 SENECA'S MORALS, SELECTIONS FROM</p> <p>9 SHELLEY'S ESSAYS AND LETTERS</p> <p>65 SHERIDAN'S PLAYS</p> <p>76 SMITH, SYDNEY, PAPERS BY</p> <p>52 SPENCE'S ANECDOTES AND OBSERVATIONS</p> <p>23 STEELE AND ADDISON, PAPERS OF</p> <p>10 SWIFT'S PROSE WRITINGS</p> <p>60 TACITUS, THE ANNALS OF</p> <p>81 THACKERAY'S BARRY LYNDON</p> <p>4 THOREAU'S ESSAYS, AND OTHER WRITINGS</p> <p>2 THOREAU'S WALDEN</p> <p>3 THOREAU'S WEEK ON THE CONCORD</p> <p>95 VASARI'S LIVES OF ITALIAN PAINTERS</p> <p>98 WALTON'S COMPLETE ANGLER</p> <p>106 WALTON'S</p> <p>24 WHITE'S NATURAL HISTORY OF SELBORNE</p> <p>23 WHITMAN'S DEMOCRATIC VISTAS</p> <p>22 WHITMAN'S SPECIMEN DAYS</p> <p>70 WOLSTONECRAFT'S RIGHTS OF WOMAN</p> <p>85 WORDSWORTH'S PROSE</p> |
|--|--|

THE WALTER SCOTT PUBLISHING COMPANY, LIMITED,
LONDON AND FELLING-ON-TYNE.

The Canterbury Poets.

EDITED BY WILLIAM SHARP. Cloth, Cut and Uncut Edges, 1s.; Red Roan,
Gilt Edges, 2s. 6d.; Pad. Morocco, Gilt Edges, 5s.

A Superior Edition Bound in Art Linen, with Photogravure Frontispiece, 2s.

- | | |
|----------------------------------|---------------------------|
| 1 CHRISTIAN YEAR | 25 HOGG |
| 2 COLERIDGE | 26 GOLDSMITH |
| 3 LONGFELLOW | 27 LOVE LETTERS, etc. |
| 4 CAMPBELL | 28 SPENSER |
| 5 SHELLEY | 29 CHILDREN OF THE POETS |
| 6 WORDSWORTH | 30 JONSON |
| 7 BLAKE | 31 BYRON. Miscellaneous |
| 8 WHITTIER | 32 BYRON. Don Juan |
| 9 POE | 33 THE SONNETS OF EUROPE |
| 10 CHATTERTON | 34 RAMSAY |
| 11 BURNS. Songs | 35 DOBELL |
| 12 BURNS. Poems | 36 POPE |
| 13 MARLOWE | 37 HEINE |
| 14 KEATS | 38 BEAUMONT & FLETCHER |
| 15 HERBERT | 39 BOWLES, LAMB, etc. |
| 16 HUGO | 40 SEA MUSIC |
| 17 COWPER | 41 EARLY ENGLISH POETRY |
| 18 SHAKESPEARE'S POEMS, etc. | 42 HERRICK |
| 19 EMERSON | 43 BALLADES AND RONDEAUX |
| 20 SONNETS OF THIS CENTURY | 44 IRISH MINSTRELSY |
| 21 WHITMAN | 45 MILTON'S PARADISE LOST |
| 22 SCOTT. Lady of the Lake, etc. | 46 JACOBITE BALLADS |
| 23 SCOTT. Marmion, etc. | 47 DAYS OF THE YEAR |
| 24 PRAED | 48 AUSTRALIAN BALLADS |
| | 49 MOORE |

THE WALTER SCOTT PUBLISHING COMPANY, LIMITED,
LONDON AND FELLING-ON-TYNE.

The Canterbury Poets—*continued.*

- 50 BORDER BALLADS
- 51 SONG-TIDE
- 52 ODES OF HORACE
- 53 OSSIAN
- 54 FAIRY MUSIC
- 55 SOUTHEY
- 56 CHAUCER
- 57 GOLDEN TREASURY
- 58 POEMS OF WILD LIFE
- 59 PARADISE REGAINED
- 60 CRABBE
- 61 DORA GREENWELL
- 62 FAUST
- 63 AMERICAN SONNETS
- 64 LANDOR'S POEMS
- 65 GREEK ANTHOLOGY
- 66 HUNT AND HOOD
- 67 HUMOROUS POEMS
- 68 BYTTON'S PLAYS
- 69 GREAT ODES
- 70 MEREDITH'S POEMS
- 71 IMITATION OF CHRIST
- 72 NAVAL SONGS
- 73 PAINTER POETS
- 74 WOMEN POETS
- 75 LOVE LYRICS
- 76 AMERICAN HUMOROUS
VERSE
- 77 SCOTTISH MINOR POETS
- 78 CAVALIER LYRISTS

- 79 GERMAN BALLADS
- 80 SONGS OF BERANGER
- 81 RODEN NOEL'S POEMS
- 82 SONGS OF FREEDOM
- 83 CANADIAN POEMS
- 84 CONTEMPORARY SCOT-
TISH VERSE
- 85 POEMS OF NATURE
- 86 CRADLE SONGS
- 87 BALLADS OF SPORT
- 88 MATTHEW ARNOLD
- 89 CLOUGH'S BOTHIE
- 90 BROWNING'S POEMS
Pippa Passes, etc. Vol. 1.
- 91 BROWNING'S POEMS
A Blot in the 'Scutcheon, etc.
Vol. 2.
- 92 BROWNING'S POEMS
Dramatic Lyrics. Vol. 3.
- 93 MACKAY'S LOVER'S MIS-
SAL
- 94 HENRY KIRKE WHITE
- 95 LYRA NICOTIANA
- 96 AURORA LEIGH
- 97 TENNYSON'S POEMS
In Memoriam, etc.
- 98 TENNYSON'S POEMS
The Princess, etc.
- 99 WAR SONGS
- 100 JAMES THOMSON
- 101 ALEXANDER SMITH
- 102 EUGENE LEE-HAMILTON
- 103 PAUL VERLAINE

Ibsen's Prose Dramas

EDITED BY WILLIAM ARCHER

Complete in Five Vols. Crown 8vo, Cloth, Price 3s. 6d. each.

*Set of Five Vols., in Case, 17s. 6d.; in Half Morocco,
in Case, 32s. 6d.*

'We seem at last to be shown men and women as they are; and at first, it is more than we can endure. . . . All Ibsen's characters speak and act as if they were hypnotised, and under their creator's imperious demand to reveal themselves. There never was such a mirror held up to nature before; it is too terrible. . . . Yet we must return to Ibsen, with his remorseless surgery, his remorseless electric-light, until we, too, have grown strong and learned to face the naked—if necessary, the stayed and bleeding—reality.'—SPEAKER (London).

VOL. I. 'A DOLL'S HOUSE,' 'THE LEAGUE OF YOUTH,' and 'THE PILLARS OF SOCIETY.' With Portrait of the Author, and Biographical Introduction by WILLIAM ARCHER.

VOL. II. 'GHOSTS,' 'AN ENEMY OF THE PEOPLE,' and 'THE WILD DUCK.' With an Introductory Note.

VOL. III. 'LADY INGER OF ÖSTRÄT,' 'THE VIKINGS AT HELGELAND,' 'THE PRETENDERS.' With an Introductory Note and Portrait of Ibsen.

VOL. IV. 'EMPEROR AND GALILEAN.' With an Introductory Note by WILLIAM ARCHER.

VOL. V. 'ROSMSHOLM,' 'THE LADY FROM THE SEA,' 'HEDDA GABLER.' Translated by WILLIAM ARCHER. With an Introductory Note.

The sequence of the plays in each volume is chronological; the complete set of volumes comprising the dramas presents them in chronological order.

THE WALTER SCOTT PUBLISHING COMPANY, LIMITED,
LONDON AND FELLINGDON-TYNE.

Great Writers

A NEW SERIES OF CRITICAL BIOGRAPHIES.

EDITED BY ERIC ROBERTSON AND FRANK T. MARZIALS.

A Complete Bibliography to each Volume, by J. P. ANDERSON, British Museum, London.

Cloth, Uncut Edges, Gilt Top. Price 1s. 6d.

VOLUMES ALREADY ISSUED.

- LIFE OF LONGFELLOW. By Professor ERIC S. ROBERTSON.
LIFE OF COLERIDGE. By HALL CAINE.
LIFE OF DICKENS. By FRANK T. MARZIALS.
LIFE OF DANTE GABRIEL ROSSETTI. By J. KNIGHT.
LIFE OF SAMUEL JOHNSON. By Colonel F. GRANT.
LIFE OF DARWIN. By G. T. BRETHERTON.
LIFE OF CHARLOTTE BRONTË. By A. BIRRELL.
LIFE OF THOMAS CARLYLE. By R. GARNETT, LL.D.
LIFE OF ADAM SMITH. By R. B. HALDANE, M.P.
LIFE OF KEATS. By W. M. ROSETTI.
LIFE OF SHELLEY. By WILLIAM SHARP.
LIFE OF SMOLLETT. By DAVID HANNAY.
LIFE OF GOLDSMITH. By AUSTIN DOBSON.
LIFE OF SCOTT. By Professor YONGE.
LIFE OF BURNS. By Professor BLACKIE.
LIFE OF VICTOR HUGO. By FRANK T. MARZIALS.
LIFE OF EMERSON. By RICHARD GARNETT, LL.D.
LIFE OF GOETHE. By JAMES SIME.
LIFE OF CONGREVE. By EDMUND GOSSE.
LIFE OF BUNYAN. By Canon VENABLES.
LIFE OF CRABBE. By T. E. KEBBEL.
LIFE OF HEINE. By WILLIAM SHARP.
LIFE OF MILL. By W. L. COURTNEY.
LIFE OF SCHILLER. By HENRY W. NEVINSON.
LIFE OF CAPTAIN MARRYAT. By DAVID HANNAY.
LIFE OF LESSING. By T. W. ROLLESTON.
LIFE OF MILTON. By R. GARNETT, LL.D.
LIFE OF BALZAC. By FREDERICK WEDMORE.
LIFE OF GEORGE ELIOT. By OSCAR BROWNING.
LIFE OF JANE AUSTEN. By GOLDWIN SMITH.
LIFE OF BROWNING. By WILLIAM SHARP.
LIFE OF BYRON. By Hon. RODEN NOEL.
LIFE OF HAWTHORNE. By MONCURE D. CONWAY.
LIFE OF SCHOPENHAUER. By Professor WALLACE.
LIFE OF SHERIDAN. By LLOYD SANDERS.
LIFE OF THACKERAY. By HERMAN MERIVALE, and FRANK T. MARZIALS.
LIFE OF CERVANTES. By H. E. WATTS.
LIFE OF VOLTAIRE. By FRANCIS ESPINASSE.
LIFE OF LEIGH HUNT. By COSMO MONKHOUSE.
LIFE OF WHITTIER. By W. J. LINTON.
LIFE OF RENAN. By FRANCIS ESPINASSE.
LIFE OF THOREAU. By H. S. SALT.

LIBRARY EDITION OF 'GREAT WRITERS,' Demy 8vo, 2s. 6d.

THE WALTER SCOTT PUBLISHING COMPANY, LIMITED,
LONDON AND FELLING-ON-TYNE.

COMPACT AND PRACTICAL.

In Limp Cloth ; for the Pocket. Price One Shilling.

THE EUROPEAN CONVERSATION BOOKS.

FRENCH

ITALIAN

SPANISH

GERMAN

NORWEGIAN

CONTENTS.

Hints to Travellers—Everyday Expressions—Arriving at and Leaving a Railway Station—Custom House Enquiries—In a Train—At a Buffet and Restaurant—At an Hotel—Paying an Hotel Bill—Enquiries in a Town—On Board Ship—Embarking and Disembarking—Excursion by Carriage—Enquiries as to Diligences—Enquiries as to Boats—Engaging Apartments—Washing List and Days of Week—Restaurant Vocabulary—Telegrams and Letters, etc., etc.

The contents of these little handbooks are so arranged as to permit direct and immediate reference. All dialogues or enquiries not considered absolutely essential have been purposely excluded, nothing being introduced which might confuse the traveller rather than assist him. A few hints are given in the introduction which will be found valuable to those unaccustomed to foreign travel.

THE WALTER SCOTT PUBLISHING COMPANY, LIMITED,
LONDON AND FELLING-ON-TYNE.

NEW ENGLAND LIBRARY.

GRAVURE EDITION.

PRINTED ON ANTIQUE PAPER. 2s. 6d. PER VOL.

Each Volume with a Frontispiece in Photogravure.

By NATHANIEL HAWTHORNE.

THE SCARLET LETTER.
THE HOUSE OF THE SEVEN GABLES.
THE BLITHEDALE ROMANCE.
TANGLEWOOD TALES.
TWICE-TOLD TALES.
A WONDER-BOOK FOR GIRLS AND BOYS.
OUR OLD HOME.
MOSSSES FROM AN OLD MANSE.
THE SNOW IMAGE.
TRUE STORIES FROM HISTORY AND BIOGRAPHY.
THE NEW ADAM AND EVE.
LEGENDS OF THE PROVINCE HOUSE.

By OLIVER WENDELL HOLMES.

THE AUTOCRAT OF THE BREAKFAST-TABLE.
THE PROFESSOR AT THE BREAKFAST-TABLE.
THE POET AT THE BREAKFAST-TABLE.
ELSIE VENNER.

By HENRY THOREAU.

ESSAYS AND OTHER WRITINGS.
WALDEN; OR, LIFE IN THE WOODS.
A WEEK ON THE CONCORD.

THE WALTER SCOTT PUBLISHING COMPANY, LIMITED,
LONDON AND FELLING-ON-TYNE.

EVERY-DAY HELP SERIES

OF USEFUL HANDBOOKS. Price 6d. each,

OR IN ROAN BINDING, PRICE 1s. .

Contributors—J. LANGDON DOWN, M.D., F.R.C.P.; HENRY POWER, M.B., F.R.C.S.; J. MORTIMER-GRANVILLE, M.D.; J. CRICHTON BROWNE, M.D., LL.D.; ROBERT FARQUHARSON, M.D. Edin.; W. S. GREENFIELD, M.D., F.R.C.P., and others.

1. **How to Do Business.** A Guide to Success in Life.
2. **How to Behave.** Manual of Etiquette and Personal Habits.
3. **How to Write.** A Manual of Composition and Letter Writing.
4. **How to Debate.** With Hints on Public Speaking.
5. **Don'ts.** Directions for avoiding Common Errors of Speech.
6. **The Parental Don'ts.** Warnings to Parents.
7. **Why Smoke and Drink.** By James Parton.
8. **Elocution.** By T. R. W. Pearson, M.A., of St. Catharine's College, Cambridge, and F. W. Waithman, Lecturers on Elocution.
9. **The Secret of a Clear Head.**
10. **Common Mind Troubles.**
11. **The Secret of a Good Memory.**
12. **Youth: Its Care and Culture.**
13. **The Heart and its Function.**
14. **Personal Appearances in Health and Disease.**
15. **The House and its Surroundings.**
16. **Alcohol: Its Use and Abuse.**
17. **Exercise and Training.**
18. **Baths and Bathing.**
19. **Health in Schools.**
20. **The Skin and its Troubles.**
21. **How to make the Best of Life.**
22. **Nerves and Nerve-Troubles.**
23. **The Sight, and How to Preserve it.**
24. **Premature Death: Its Promotion and Prevention.**
25. **Change, as a Mental Restorative.**
26. **The Gentle Art of Nursing the Sick.**
27. **The Care of Infants and Young Children.**
28. **Invalid Feeding, with Hints on Diet.**
29. **Every-day Ailments, and How to Treat Them.**
30. **Thrifty Housekeeping.**
31. **Home Cooking.**
32. **Flowers and Flower Culture.**
33. **Sleep and Sleeplessness.**
34. **The Story of Life.**
35. **Household Nursing.**

THE WALTER SCOTT PUBLISHING COMPANY, LIMITED,
LONDON AND FELLING-ON-TYNE.

The Music Story Series.

A SERIES OF LITERARY-MUSICAL MONOGRAPHS.

° Edited by FREDERICK J. CROWEST,

Author of "The Great Tone Poets."

Illustrated with Photogravure and Collotype Portraits, Half-tone and Line Pictures, Facsimiles, etc.

Square Crown 8vo, Cloth, 3s. 6d. net.

VOLUMES NOW READY.

THE STORY OF ORATORIO. By ANNIE W. PATTERSON, B.A., Mus. Doc.

THE STORY OF NOTATION. By C. F. ABDY WILLIAMS, M.A., Mus. Bac.

THE STORY OF THE ORGAN. By C. F. ABDY WILLIAMS, M.A., Author of "Bach" and "Handel" ("Master Musicians' Series").

THE STORY OF CHAMBER MUSIC. By N. KILBURN, Mus. Bac. (Cantab.), Conductor of the Middlesbrough, Sunderland, and Bishop Auckland Musical Societies.

THE STORY OF THE VIOLIN. By PAUL STOEVEING, Professor of the Violin, Guildhall School of Music, London.

THE STORY OF THE HARP. By WILLIAM H. GRATTAN FLOOD, Author of "History of Irish Music."

NEXT VOLUME.

THE STORY OF ORGAN MUSIC. By C. F. ABDY WILLIAMS, M.A., Mus. Bac.

IN PREPARATION.

THE STORY OF THE PIANOFORTE. By ALGERNON S. ROSE, Author of "Talks with Bandmen."

THE STORY OF HARMONY. By EUSTACE J. BREAKSPEARE, Author of "Mozart," "Musical Aesthetics," etc.

THE STORY OF THE ORCHESTRA. By STEWART MACPHERSON, Fellow and Professor, Royal Academy of Music.

THE STORY OF BIBLE MUSIC. By ELEONORE D'ESTERRE-KEELING, Author of "The Musicians' Birthday Book."

THE STORY OF CHURCH MUSIC. By THE EDITOR.
ETC., ETC., ETC.

THE WALTER SCOTT PUBLISHING COMPANY, LIMITED,
LONDON AND FELLING-ON-TYNE.

MUSICIANS' WIT, HUMOUR, AND ANECDOTE:

BEING *ON DITS* OF COMPOSERS, SINGERS, AND
INSTRUMENTALISTS OF ALL TIMES.

By **FREDERICK J. CROWEST,**

Author of "The Great Tone Poets," "The Story of British Music,"

Editor of "The Master Musicians" Series, &c., etc.

Profusely Illustrated with Quaint Drawings by
J. P. DONNE.

In One Volume—Crown 8vo, Cloth, Richly Gilt, Price 3/6.

.. Among the hundreds of stories abounding in wit and pointed
repartee which the volume contains, will be found anecdotes of
famous musicians of all countries and periods.

TOLSTOY: His Life and Works.

By **JOHN C. KENWORTHY,**

AN INTIMATE FRIEND OF THE GREAT RUSSIAN WRITER.

One Volume, Crown 8vo, 256 pages, Richly Bound, containing
Portraits, Facsimile Letter, Views, etc.

PRICE SIX SHILLINGS

THE WALTER SCOTT PUBLISHING COMPANY, LIMITED,
LONDON AND FELLING-ON-TYNE.

Crown 8vo, about 350 pp. each, Cloth Cover, 2/6 per Vol.;
Half-Polished Morocco, Gilt Top, 5s.

Count Tolstoy's Works.

The following Volumes are already issued—

A RUSSIAN PROPRIETOR.
THE COSSACKS.
IVAN ILYITCH, AND OTHER
STORIES.
MY RELIGION.
LIFE.
MY CONFESSION.
CHILDHOOD, BOYHOOD,
YOUTH.
THE PHYSIOLOGY OF WAR.
ANNA KARÉNINA. 3/6.

WHAT TO DO?
WAR AND PEACE. (4 vols.)
THE LONG EXILE, ETC.
SEVASTOPOL.
THE KREUTZER SONATA, AND
FAMILY HAPPINESS.
THE KINGDOM OF GOD IS
WITHIN YOU.
WORK WHILE YE HAVE THE
LIGHT.
THE GOSPEL IN BRIEF.

Uniform with the above—

IMPRESSIONS OF RUSSIA. By Dr. GEORG BRANDES.

Post 4to, Cloth, Price 1s.

PATRIOTISM AND CHRISTIANITY.

To which is appended a Reply to Criticisms of the Work.

By COUNT TOLSTOY.

1/- Booklets by Count Tolstoy.

Bound in White Grain d Boards, with Gilt Lettering.

WHERE LOVE IS, THERE GOD
IS ALSO.
THE TWO PILGRIMS.
WHAT MEN LIVE BY.

THE GODSON.
IF YOU NEGLECT THE FIRE,
YOU DON'T PUT IT OUT.
WHAT SHALL IT PROFIT A MAN?

2/- Booklets by Count Tolstoy.

NEW EDITIONS, REVISED.

Small 12mo, Cloth, with Embossed Design on Cover, each containing

Two Stories by Count Tolstoy, and Two Drawings by

H. R. Millar. In Box, Price 2s. each.

Volume I. contains—
WHERE LOVE IS, THERE GOD
IS ALSO.
THE GODSON.

Volume II. contains—
WHAT MEN LIVE BY.
WHAT SHALL IT PROFIT A
MAN?

Volume III. contains—
THE TWO PILGRIMS.
IF YOU NEGLECT THE FIRE,
YOU DON'T PUT IT OUT.

Volume IV. contains—
MASTER AND MAN.

Volume V. contains—
TOLSTOY'S PARABLES.

THE WALTER SCOTT PUBLISHING COMPANY, LIMITED,
LONDON AND FELLING-ON-TYNE.

THE CONTEMPORARY SCIENCE SERIES.

Edited by HAVELOCK ELLIS.

NEW VOLUMES. Crown 8vo, Cloth, Price 6s.

A STUDY OF RECENT EARTHQUAKES.

By CHARLES DAVISON, D.Sc., F.G.S., Author of "The Hereford Earthquake of December 17th, 1896."

The aim of the author, who is a leading authority on this subject, is to provide a series of studies of a few earthquakes that have been investigated recently by scientific methods—such as the Neapolitan earthquake of 1857, the Ischian earthquakes of 1881 and 1883, the Charleston earthquake of 1886, the Riviera earthquake of 1887, the Japanese earthquake of 1891, the Hereford earthquake of 1896, the Indian earthquake of 1897, etc.

Crown 8vo, Cloth, Price 6s.

MORALS: Their Psycho-Sociological Bases.

Translated from the French of Duprat's *La Morale*,

By W. J. GREENTREE, M.A., Headmaster of Marling School.

The field of psychological research has been widened by the triple alliance of psychology, physiology, and sociology—an alliance at once of the most intimate and fundamental nature, and productive of far-reaching results. It need, therefore, occasion no surprise that among the volumes of a scientific series is to be found a treatise dealing with ethical questions. Recent works on ethics have not been numerous, and the writers seem more anxious to soar into the realm of lofty thought than to lay the foundations of work that will be positive and lasting. It would seem that the time has come for a system of ethics less ambitious in its aims, more restricted in its scope, and based on a more rigorous method of treatment.

Crown 8vo, Cloth, Price 6s.

THE MAKING OF CITIZENS: A Study in Comparative Education.

By R. E. HUGHES, M.A., B.Sc., Author of "Schools at Home and Abroad."

It is instructive and interesting to have a complete and comprehensive account of both our own and foreign systems of education based upon an exhaustive study of authoritative and official data. Mr. Hughes has set himself the task of showing in detail and by a series of pictures, so to speak, what the four leading nations of the world—England, France, Germany, and America—are doing in the way of manufacturing citizens. The primary and secondary systems are described in detail, and the social problems of national education are described and diagnosed.

Crown 8vo, Cloth, Price 6s. With 12 Portraits.

History of Geology and Palæontology to the end of the Nineteenth Century.

By KARL VON ZITTEL, Professor of Geology in the University of Munich.

Translated by MARIE M. OGILVIE-GORDON, D.Sc., Ph.D.

This work is recognised as the most complete and authoritative history of geology. It is brought down to the end of the nineteenth century. With the author's advice and assistance the work has been slightly bridged by the omission of the less generally interesting matter.

THE WALTER SCOTT PUBLISHING COMPANY, LIMITED,
LONDON AND FELLING-ON-TYNE.

The Emerald Library.

Crown 8vo, Gilt Top, Half Bound in Dark Green Ribbed Cloth, with Light Green Cloth Sides, 2s. each.

Barnaby Rudge
Old Curiosity Shop
Pickwick Papers
Nicholas Nickleby
Oliver Twist
Martin Chuzzlewit
Sketches by Boz
Olive
The Ogilvies
Ivanhoe
Kenilworth
Jacob Faithful
Peter Simple
Paul Clifford
Eugene Aram
Ernest Maltravers
Alice; or, The Mystery
Rienzi
Pelham
The Last Days of Pompeii
The Scottish Chiefs
Wilson's Tales
The Fair God
Miss Beresford's Mystery
A Mountain Daisy
Hazel; or, Perilpoint Lighthouse
Vicar of Wakefield
Prince of the House of David
Wide, Wide World
Village Tales
Ben-Hur
Uncle Tom's Cabin
Robinson Crusoe
The White Slave
Charles O'Malley
Shipman Easy
Bride of Lammermoor
Heart of Midlothian
Last of the Barons
Old Mortality
Tom Cringle's Log
Cruise of the Midge
Colleen Lawn
Valentine Vox
Night and Morning
Bunyan
Foxe's Book of Martyrs
Mansfield Park
Last of the Mohicans
Poor Jack
The Lamplighter
Jane Eyre
Pillar of Fire
Throne of David
Dombey and Son
Vanity Fair
Infantine
Benlah
Harry Lorrequer
Essays of Elia
Sheridan's Plays
Waverley
Quentin Durward
Talisman
From Jest to Earnest
Knight of 19th Century

Candle's Lectures
Jack Hinton
Bret Harte
Ingoldsby Legends
Handy Andy
Lewis Arundel
Guy Mannering
Rob Roy
Fortunes of Nigel
Man in the Iron Mask
Great Composers
Louise de la Valliere
Great Painters
Rory O'More
Arabian Nights
Swiss Family Robinson
Andersen's Fairy Tales
Three Musketeers
Twenty Years After
Vicomte de Bragelonne
Monte Cristo—Dantes
Revenge of Dantes
The Newcomes
Life of Robert Moffat
Life of Gladstone
Cranford
North and South
Life of Gen. Gordon
Lincoln and Garfield
Great Modern Women
Henry Esmond
Alton Locke
Life of Livingstone
Life of Grace Darling
White's Selborne
Tales of the Covenanters
Barriers Burned Away
Opening a Chestnut Burr
Pendennis
David Copperfield
Luck of Barry Lyndon
St. Elmo
Son of Porthos
Stanley and Africa
Life of Wesley
Life of Spurgeon
For Lust of Gold
Wooling of Webster
At the Mercy of Teberlus
Countess of Rudolstadt
Consuelo
Two Years before the Mast
Fair Maid of Perth
Peveril of the Peak
Shirley
Queechy
Naomi; or, the Last Days of Jerusalem
Little Women and Good Wives
Hypatia
Villette
Ruth
Agatha's Husband
Head of the Family
Old Helmet
Bleak House
Cecil Dreeme
Melbourne House
Wuthering Heights

The Days of Bruce
The Vale of Cedars
Hunchback of Notre Vasshi (Dame)
The Caxtons
Harold, Last of the Saxon Kings
Toilers of the Sea
What Can She Do?
New Border Tales
Frank Fairleigh
Zanoni
Macaria
Inez
Conduct and Duty
Windsor Castle
Hard Times
Tower of London
John Halifax, Gentle
Westward Ho! (man)
Lavengro
It is Never Too Late to Mend
Two Years Ago
In His Steps
Crucifixion of Phillip Strong
His Brother's Keeper
Robert Hardy's Seven Days, and Malcolm Kirk (in 1 vol.)
Richard Bruce
The Twentieth Door
House of the Seven Gables
Elsie Venner
The Roman Rye
Little Dorrit
The Scarlet Letter
Mary Barton
Home Influence
The Mother's Recompense
Tennyson's Poems
Harry Coverdale's Courtship
The Bible in Spain
Handbook of House-keeping
The Dead Secret
Queen Victoria
Martin Rattler
Ungava
The Corn Island
Adam Bede
The Yung
The Virginians
A Tale of Two Cities
Scenes of Clerical Life
The Mill on the Floss
Danesbury House
A Life for a Life
Christmas Books
Tom Brown's Schooldays
Grimm's Fairy Tales
East Lynne (Stress)
Through Storm and the Channings
Old St. Paul's (Hearth)
The Cloister and the Cell
Mrs. Halliburton's Troubles.

THE WORLD'S GREAT NOVELS.

A series of acknowledged masterpieces by the most eminent writers of fiction. Excellent paper, large type, handsomely and strongly bound in Russia Red Cloth, these books are admirably suited either for presentation or for a permanent place in the Library, while the low price brings them within reach of every class of readers.

Large Crown 8vo. Hundreds of Pages. Numerous Illustrations.
3s. 6d. per Vol.

Adam Bede. By George Eliot. With Six Full-page Illustrations by S. H. Vedder and J. Jellicoe.

Anna Karenina. By Count Tolstoy. With Ten Illustrations by Paul Frénzeny, and a Frontispiece Portrait of Count Tolstoy.

David Copperfield. By Charles Dickens. With Forty Illustrations by Hablot K. Browne ("Phiz").

Ivanhoe. By Sir Walter Scott. With Eight Full-page Illustrations by Hugh M. Eaton.

Jane Eyre. By Charlotte Brontë. With Eight Full-page Illustrations, and Thirty-two Illustrations in the Text, and Photographic Portrait of Charlotte Brontë.

John Halifax, Gentleman. By Mrs. Craik. With Eight Full-page Illustrations by Alice Barber Stephens.

Miserables, Les. By Victor Hugo. With Twelve Full-page Illustrations.

Notre Dame. By Victor Hugo. With many Illustrations.

Three Musketeers, The. By Alexandre Dumas. With Twelve Full-page Illustrations by T. Eyre Macklin.

Twenty Years After. By Alexandre Dumas. With numerous Illustrations.

Vicomte de Bragelonne, The. By Alexandre Dumas. With Eight Full-page Illustrations by Frank T. Merrill.

Louise de la Valliere. By Alexandre Dumas. With Eight Full-page Illustrations by Frank T. Merrill.

The Man in the Iron Mask. By Alexandre Dumas. With Eight Full-page Illustrations by Frank T. Merrill.

Count of Monte-Cristo, The. By Alexandre Dumas. With Sixteen Full-page Illustrations by Frank T. Merrill.

Chicot, the Jester. (La Dame de Monsoreau). By Alexandre Dumas. New and Complete Translation. With Nine Full-page Illustrations by Frank T. Merrill.

Marguerite de Valois. By Alexandre Dumas. New and Complete Translation. With Nine Illustrations by Frank T. Merrill.

Forty-Five Guardsmen, The. By Alexandre Dumas. New and Complete Translation. With Nine Illustrations by Frank T. Merrill.

War and Peace. By Count Tolstoy. Two Volumes. With Five Full-page Illustrations by E. H. Garrett.

THE WALTER SCOTT PUBLISHING COMPANY, LIMITED,
LONDON AND FELLING-ON-TYNE.

